

# **THE NEW TESTAMENT**

**WILLIAM WHISTON**

**1745**

# **Wipf and Stock Publishers**

## **Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #10**

### **The New Testament**

From Greek Manuscript of BEZA

**By: William Whiston**

**1745** Original Publisher, William Whiston, London

330 Pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers  
1396 E. Washington Blvd.  
Pasadena, CA, 91104  
1-626-797-4756

Printer: James Baden  
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-359-6

# Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leiser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leiser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, “ ‘Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.’ ” “Therefore blessed be they,” the preface continues, “and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God’s book unto God’s people in a tongue which they understand?” And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge “that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance.”

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. \*

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell  
(Charter Member #12)

\*additional versions supplied by:  
Bill Chamberlain



## Biographical Sketch of William Whiston

William Whiston is probably best-known for his English translation of the Greek classic history of the Jewish people during New Testament times, *The Works of Flavius Josephus*.

Whiston, (1667-1752), studied under Sir Isaac Newton at Cambridge University (England), and eventually became a mathematics professor there. In 1693 he was ordained a deacon in the Church of England, then chaplain to the bishop of Norwich. About that time he wrote his first book, *New Theory of the Earth*, which had Newton's approval. After leaving Cambridge for a brief period he returned to serve under Newton and eventually went on to succeed him in the Chair of Mathematics.

As time went on Whiston began to develop some liberal theological speculations. He held that the *Apostolic Constitutions* were "the most sacred of the canonical books of the New Testament." After developing a number of Arian views, and even writing a pamphlet expounding on them in 1798, he was banished from Cambridge in 1710 for such unorthodox notions.

Whiston then became somewhat restless; he wrote, he lectured and he even begged for money from friends. In 1711 he published *Primitive Christianity Revived*, which led to his being considered for prosecution by the ecclesiastical Convocation (but which was never carried out).

In 1715 he started his "Society for Promoting Primitive Christianity," specializing in the sale of Arian literature. During the remainder of his life Whiston continued expounding in print many strange notions on mathematics and theology.

It was in 1737 that Whiston produced his most enduring work, his translation of Josephus' Life and Works.

Then, remarkably, when past 78 years old, Whiston published his translation of the New Testament (1745), which he titled, *The Primitive New Testament*. (It seems he was very fond of the concept of "primitive"!)

It followed the *Authorized Version* quite closely, except in the places where the three manuscripts (called the "Western Text") he considered most authentic (or "primitive") differed.

The Gospels and Acts portions were translated from the *Codex Beza* (D), the "most primitive of all" New Testament manuscripts, (with "imperfections...supplied from the vulgar Latin"). Whiston held the preposterous view that *Codex Beza* was written "within thirty years of the death of John the Apostle," though most scholars date it no earlier than the 5th or 6th centuries. Because of his following Beza, Whiston added the

peculiar gloss found in Luke 6:5, "On the same day seeing one working on the sabbath, he said unto him, Man, if thou knowest what thou doest, thou art blessed: but if thou dost not know thou are cursed, and art a transgressor of the law." Following his fondness for the *Apostolic Constitutions*, he placed the order of the Gospels as Matthew, John, Luke, Mark, claiming this was the original order instituted by the Apostles for public reading! He also included the note that Mark was Peter's son, and that he had abridged Matthew's Gospel!

Paul's Epistles were translated from the *Codex Claromontanus*, which Whiston dated about A.D. 300 (though most date it in the 6th century). For the remaining "Catholick Epistles" and Revelation Whiston followed *Codex Alexandrinus*.

In 1747, two years after publishing his New Testament translation, when he was past 80 years old, Whiston left the Church of England and joined the Baptists.

Apparently Whiston intended to follow his New Testament with a translation of non-canonical Epistles, but this volume was never published. Instead, begun when he was 79 years old, he completed his autobiography, *Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Mr. William Whiston* when he was 82, in 1749!

— William E. Paul, Editor  
Bible Editions & Versions

# The Four G O S P E L S

OF MATTHEW,

JOHN,

LUKE,

MARK :

With the

## ACTS of the APOSTLES:

According to the *Greek* Part of the MS.  
of *Beza*, now probably above 1600 Years old,  
in the publick Library of the Univerſity of  
*Cambridge* : Collated by *Patrick Young* ;  
*A. B. Uſher* ; and at leaſt twice by *Dr. Mills* ;  
beſides a ſtill later Collation.

The Imperfections of which Copy are here ſup-  
plied from the vulgar *Latin*.

---

Translated into *Engliſh*, and publiſhed  
by Mr. *WHISTON*.

---

The modern Diſtinctions of Chapters, and Ver-  
ſes, and Sentences, and Words, are retained,  
though not in the MS.

*Afterwards, Let our Acts be read : and the Epistles  
of Paul, our fellow-worker, which be ſent to the Churches  
under the Conduſt of the Holy Spirit. And afterwards,  
Let a Deacon, or a Preſbyter read the Gospels ; both  
thoſe which I Matthew and John have delivered to you ;  
and thoſe which the fellow-workers of Paul received and  
left to you, Luke and Mark. Conſtit. Apoſt. II. 57.*

## The Gospel according to Matthew.

1. **T**HE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. 2 Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren, 3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram, 4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon, 5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse, 6 And Jesse begat David the king, and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been* the wife of Urias: 7 And Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa, 8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ahazias, and Ahazias begat Joas, and Joas begat Amazias, and Amazias begat Ozias, 9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias, 10 And Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias, 11 And Josias begat Joakim, and Joakim begat Jechonias and his brethren, at the captivity of Babylon: 12 And after the captivity of Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel, 13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor, 14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud, 15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob, 16 And Jacob begat Joseph to whom the Virgin Mary was espoused, and bare Jesus Christ. 17 So all the generations from Abraham to David were fourteen generations: and from David until the captivity of Babylon, were seventeen generations: and

from the captivity of Babylon unto Christ, were fourteen generations. 18 Now the generation of Christ was on this wise, When as Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with Child of the Holy Ghost. 19 Then Joseph her Husband being a righteous Man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. 20 But while he thought on these things, behold the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost: 21 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins. 22 Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by Esaias the prophet, saying, 23 Behold a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us. 24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife: And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name Jesus.

11. Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise-men from the east to Jerusalem, 2 Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. 3 When Herod the king had heard it, he was troubled, and Jerusalem with him. 4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests, and scribes of the people together, he demanded where Christ should be born. 5 And they said unto him,

## According to Matthew:

In Bethlehem of Judea : for thus it is written by the prophet ; 6 And thou Bethlehem of the land of Juda, art thou the least among the princes of Juda? for out of thee shall come a Governor that shall rule my People Israel. 7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise-men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. 8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said unto them, Go, and search diligently for the young child : And when ye shall have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. 9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over the young child. 10 When they saw the star, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy. 11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the child with Mary his mother, and fell down and worshipped him : and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts ; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. 12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own Country another way. 13 And when they were departed, behold the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee : for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. 14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt : 15 And was there until the death of Herod : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son. 16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise-men. 17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken of the Lord by Jeremy the prophet, saying, 18 In Rama there was a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel lamenting her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. 19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, 20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the Land of Israel : for they are dead who sought the young child's life. 21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the Land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to depart : But being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee : 23 And he came and dwelt in a City called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. † Read, by the prophet Jeremias, from Luk. II. 39. & old MSS.

III. In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, 2 And saying, Repeat ye ; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. 4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loyns ; and his meat was locusts, and wild honey. 5 Then went out

## According to Matthew.

out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region about Jordan, 6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. 7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruit meet for repentance. 9 And think not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to ~~our~~ father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 10 Now also the ax is laid to the root of the trees: therefore every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 11 I indeed baptize you in water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to carry: he will baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and fire. 12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into his garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenched fire. 13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. 14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and thou comest to me. 15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer *it* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. 16 And Jesus when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending out of heaven like a dove, and coming upon him. 17 And lo, a voice from heaven, saying unto him, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

IV. Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness, to be

tempted of the devil. 2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterwards an hungred. 3 And the tempter came to him, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. 4 But Jesus answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. 5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, 6 And saith unto him; If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down: for it is written, he shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and upon their hands they shall hold thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. 7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. 8 Again, the devil took him up into an exceeding high mountain, and shewed him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them: 9 And said unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. 10 Then said Jesus unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only thou shalt serve. 11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold angels came and ministered unto him. 12 Now when he had heard that John was delivered up, he departed into Galilee. 13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capharnaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: 14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, 15 The land of Zabulon, and of Nephthalim, the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: 16 The people who sat in darkness, saw great light: To them who sat in the region and shadow,

## According to Matthew:

shadow of death, light is sprung up. 17 For from that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 18 And He passing by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers. 19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. 21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them. 22 And they immediately left their ship and their father, and followed him. 23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people. 24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were ill of divers diseases, and torments, and those who were possessed with demons, and those who were lunatick, and those who had the palsy; and he healed them all. 25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and Judaea, and beyond Jordan.

V. And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him. 2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, 3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 4 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. 5 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. 6 Blessed are they who do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. 7 Blessed are the merciful:

for they shall obtain mercy. 8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. 9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God. 10 Blessed are they who are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs shall be the kingdom of heaven. 11 Blessed are ye when men shall persecute and revile you, and shall say all manner of evil against you for my sake. 12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets who were before you. 13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do they light a candle, and put it under a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in the heavens. 17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to perfect them. 18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be done. 19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: 20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed that of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall by no means enter into the kingdom of heaven. 21 Ye have heard, that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be lyable to the judgment. 22 But

## According to Matthew.

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be lyable to the judgment; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be lyable to the sanhedrim: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be lyable to gehenna of fire. 23 Therefore, if thou shalt bring thy gift to the altar, and there shalt remember that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then thou shalt come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whilst thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily, I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou shalt have paid the uttermost farthing. 27 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt not commit adultery. 28 But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29 And if thy right eye cause thee to offend, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should go away into Gehenna. 31 It hath been said, Whoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a bill of divorce. 32 But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery. 33 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said to them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shall perform unto the Lord thine Oaths. 34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is Gods

throne: 35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37 But let your communication be Yes, yes; No, no: for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of the evil one. 38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. 39 But I say unto you, that ye resist not a wicked man: but whosoever will smite thee on thy cheek, turn to him the other also. 40 To him that will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, thou shalt let him have thy cloke also. 41 And whosoever compels thee to go a mile, go with him two more. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow, thou shalt not turn away. 43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: 44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use and persecute you: 45 That ye may be children of your Father who is in the heavens; for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. 46 For if ye shall love them who love you, what reward will ye have? do not even the publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do you that is extraordinary? do not even the heathens so? 48 Ye shall therefore be perfect, even as your Father who is in the heavens is perfect.

VI. Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father in the heavens. 2 Therefore, when thou shalt do alms, thou shalt not sound a trumpet



## According to Matthew.

a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may be glorified of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. 3 But when thou dost alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth: 4 That thine alms may be in secret: and thy father who seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee. 5 And when thou shalt pray, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites: for they love to stand, and to pray in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. 6 But thou, when thou shalt pray, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father in secret, and thy Father who seeth in secret, shall reward thee. 7 But when ye pray, ye shall not use vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. 8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye open your mouth. 9 After this manner therefore pray ye; Our Father who art in the heavens, Hallowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done as in heaven, so on earth. 11 Give us this day the bread necessary for our sustenance. 12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. 13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. 14 For, if ye shall forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15 But if ye shall not forgive men, neither will your Father forgive you your trespasses. 16 Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face. 18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father who is in secret: and thy Father who seeth in secret, shall reward thee. 19 You shall not lay up for your selves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal. 20 But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal. 21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! 24 No one can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon: 25 Therefore I say unto you, Be not solicitous for your life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on: Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? 26 Behold the fowls of heaven: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? 27 Which of you by being solicitous can add one cubit unto his stature? 28 And why are ye solicitous for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin. 29 And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these. 30 Wherefore if God do clothe the grass of the field which

## According to Matthew.

to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, *shall be* not much more do so to you, O ye of little faith? 31 Therefore ye shall not be solicitous, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithal shall we be clothed? 32 For, after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you. 34 Ye shall not therefore be solicitous for the morrow: for the morrow will be sufficient about things for it self: sufficient for the day *is* the evil thereof.

VII. Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. 3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull the mote out of thine eye; and behold a beam is in thine own eye? 5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye. 6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they at any time trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you. 7 Ask and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall find: knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, shall be opened. 9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son shall ask bread, will he give him a stone? 10 And if he shall ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? 11 If ye then being evil,

know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father who is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? 12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. 13 Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be who go in thereat: 14 Because strait *is* the gate, and narrow the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. 15 Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather a grape of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruits: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruits. 18 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire. 19 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 20 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of the heavens: but he that doeth the will of my father who is in the heavens, he shall enter into the kingdom of the heavens. 21 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out demons? and in thy name done many wonderful works? 22 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me all ye that work iniquity. 23 Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, he shall be likened unto a wise man who built his house upon a rock: 24 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon the house: and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.

## According to Matthew:

a rock. 26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell, and great was the fall of it. 28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the multitude were astonished at his doctrine. 29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes and pharisees.

VIII. When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. 2 And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 3 And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him, saying, I will: Be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. 4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no one, but go away, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 5 And when he was entered into Capharnaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching; 6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home grievously tormented with the palsy. 7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him. 8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof: but say the word only, and my servant will be healed. 9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. 10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no nor in Israel. 11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west,

and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of the heavens. 12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go away, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed from that hour. 14 And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wifes mother laid, and sick of a fever. 15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministered unto them. 16 And when the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with demons: and he cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all that were sick: 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses. 18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side. 19 And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. 20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me to go and bury my father. 22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead. 23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him. 24 And behold there arose a great tempest in the sea, inasmuch that the ship was covered with waves: but he was asleep. 25 And his disciples came to him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. 26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and

## According to Matthew.

sea, and there was a great calm. 27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him! 28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gerasens, there met him two possessed with demons, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. 29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time? 30 And there was a little way off from them an herd of many swine feeding. 31 So the demons besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine. 32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the swine: and behold, the whole herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. 33 And the keepers fled, and went away unto the city, and told all things; and all that was befallen to the possessed of the demons. 34 And behold the whole city came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

IX. And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. 2 And behold they brought to him one who had the palsy, lying on a couch, and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto him who had the palsy, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee. 3 And behold certain of the scribes said among themselves, This man blasphemeth. 4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk? 5 But that ye may know that the Son of

man hath power on earth to forgive sins, then saith he to him who had the palsy, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thine house. 7 And he arose, and departed to his house. 8 But when the multitude saw it, they were astonished, and glorified God, who had given such power unto men. 9 And as Jesus went from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him. 10 And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. 11 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicans and sinners? 12 But when he heard it, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. 13 But go ye and learn what that is, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners. 14 Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast often; but thy disciples fast not? 15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridegroom fast, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them; and then they shall fast in those days. 16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. 17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the new wine breaketh the bottles, and the wine perisheth: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved. 18 While he spake these things unto them, behold there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying:

## According to Matthew.

That my daughter is now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. 19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and his disciples. 20 And behold, a woman who had a bloody flux twelve years, came behind *him*, and touched the hem of his garment. 21 For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be cured. 22 But he turned him about; and stood still; and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath cured thee. And the woman was cured from that hour. 23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise, 24 He said unto them, Give place, for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed at him. 25 But when the people were put forth, he came and took her by the hand, and the damsel arose. 26 And his fame went abroad into all that land. 27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed, crying, and saying, Thou son of David have mercy on us. 28 And he cometh into the house, and the two blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yes, Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, and said, According to your faith, be it unto you. 30 And their eyes were opened, and Jesus straightly charged them, saying, See that no one know *it*. 31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country. 32 As they went out, behold they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a *dæmon*. 33 And when the *dæmon* was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. 34 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and

preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease. 36 But when he saw the multitudes, he had compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. 37 Then saith he to his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers few. 38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

X. And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power *over* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease. 1 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, 3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publican, James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, 4 And Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Scauriot, who also betrayed him. 5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, and said, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into a city of Samaritans enter ye not. 6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out *dæmons*: freely ye have received, freely give. 9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses: 10 Nor bag for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor a staff: for the workman is worthy of his meat. 11 And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter into it, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence. 12 And when ye come into an house, salute it, saying, Peace be to this house

## According to Matthew.

house. 13 If the House be worthy, your peace shall be upon it : but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. 14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words : when ye depart out of the city, shake off the dust of your feet. 15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city. 16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves : be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. 17 Beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the synhedrim, and they will scourge you in their synagogues. 18 And ye shall stand before governors for my sake, for a testimony to them, and the Gentiles. 19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak : 20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of the Father who speaketh in you. 21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child : and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death. 22 And ye shall be hated of all for my names sake : but he that endureth to the end, shall be saved. 23 But when they shall persecute you in this city, flee ye unto another : and if they persecute you in the other, flee ye unto another : Verily I say unto you, ye shall not finish the cities of Israel till the Son of man come. 24 The disciple is not above the master, nor the servant above the lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as the master, and the servant as his lord : if they shall call the master of the House Beelzebub, how much more them of his household ? 26 Fear them not therefore : for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid, that shall not be made known. 27 What I tell you in darkness, speak ye in the light : and what ye hear in the ear, preach ye upon the house-tops. 28 And fear not them who kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul : but rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna. 29 Do they not sell two sparrows for a farthing ? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. 30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbred. 31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. 32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is in the heavens. 33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in the heavens. 34 Think not that I come to send peace on earth : I came not to send peace, but a sword. 35 For I came to set a son at variance against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter in law against her mother in law. 36 And a mans foes shall be those of his own household. 37 He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me : 38 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. 39 He that findeth his life shall lose it : but he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it. 40 He that receiveth you, receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. 41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward. 42 And whosoever shall give to drink to one of the least of these, a cup of cold water, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, his reward shall not be lost.

XI. And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding

## According to Matthew:

manding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities. 2 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Jesus, he sent two of his disciples, 3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another? 4 But Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: 5 The blind receive their sight, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. 6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be scandalized at me. 7 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? 8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses. 9 But what went ye out to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. 10 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. 11 Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater than he. 12 And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. 13 For all the prophets, and the law prophesied until John. 14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias who was to come. 15 He that hath ears, let him hear. 16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like to children sitting in the market, who calling unto their fellows, 17 Say, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned, and ye have not lamented. 18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a demon. 19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners: and wisdom is justified of her children. 20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not. 21 Wo unto thee, Chorazin, wo unto thee, Bethsaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 22 Moreover I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. 23 And thou, Capharnaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven, or shalt thou descend into Hades? for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained unto this day. 24 Moreover I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for you. 25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. 26 Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. 27 All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth the Son but the Father: neither knoweth any one the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him. 28 Come unto me all that labour, and you who are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

XII. Ac

## According to Matthew.

XII. At that time Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. 2 But when the Pharisees saw them, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath. 3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did when he was hungry, and they that were with him, 4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them who were with him, but only for the priests? 5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbaths the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? 6 For I say unto you, that here is one greater than the temple. 7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. 8 For the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath. 9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue. 10 And behold, there was a man there who had his hand withered: and they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbaths? that they might accuse him. 11 But he said unto them, What man is there among you, that shall have one sheep, and it shall fall into a pit on the sabbath, does he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? 12 How much then is a man better than a sheep? wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbaths. 13 Then said he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like the other. 14 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him. 15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes fol-

lowed him, and he healed them. 16 But he charged all whom he healed that they should not make him known: 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, 18 Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. 19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. 20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. 21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust. 22 Then was brought unto him one possessed with a demon, [blind and] dumb: and he healed him, inasmuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. 23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David? 24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This man doth not cast out demons but by Beelzebub, the prince of the demons. 25 And he seeing their thoughts, said unto them, every kingdom divided against it self, is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against it self, will not be established. 26 But if Satan also cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom be established? 27 But if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. 28 But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. 29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong-man? and then he will spoil his house. 30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad. 31 Wherefore I say,

I say,



## According to Matthew.

say unto you, all sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy of the Spirit shall not be forgiven unto men. 32 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age, neither in that to come. 33 Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt; for the tree is known by the fruit. 34 O generations of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh good things. 35 A good man out of the good treasure, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things. 36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men do speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, or by thy words thou shalt be condemned. 38 Then certain of the Scribes and of the Pharisees answered him, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. 39 But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet, Jonas. 40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Son of man also be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. 41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater than Jonas is here. 42 The queen of the south shall rise up in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost

part of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater than Solomon is here. 43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth his house empty; swept also, and garnished. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and his last state is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation. 46 But while he talked to the people, behold his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak with him. 47 Then one said unto him, Behold thy mother and thy brethren have stood without, seeking to speak with thee. 48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? or who are my brethren? 49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren. 50 For whosoever does the will of my Father who is in the heavens, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

XIII. Now on the same day went Jesus out, and sat by the sea. 2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore. 3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow. 4 And when he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls came and devoured them up. 5 But some fell upon rocky places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no depth of earth: 6 And when the sun was up, they

## According to Matthew.

they were scorched, and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns : and the thorns sprung up and choked them. 8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred, some sixty, some thirty. 9 Who hath ears to hear let him hear. 10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables ? 11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance : but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath. 13 Therefore spake he to them in parables : that seeing, they might not see : and hearing, they might not hear, neither mind it, lest they shall be converted. 14 And then shall be fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, Go and tell this People, by hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand : and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. 15 For this peoples heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed ; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should mind it with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. 16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see ; and your ears, for they hear. 17 For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and were not able to see them, and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. 18 Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. 19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and makedh it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in their heart : (his is he which received seed by the way-side. 20 But he that received the seed in the rocky Places, the same is he that heareth the word, and presently with joy receiveth it : 21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while : for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, presently he is offended. 22 He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word : and the care of the age, and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. 23 But he that received seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and mindeth it, then he beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundred, some sixty, some thirty. 24 Another parable he put forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of the heavens is likened unto a man who sowed good seed in his own field : 25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. 26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares. 27 So the servants of that householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field ? from whence then hath it tares ? 28 He said unto them, A man that is an enemy hath done this. The servants say unto him, Wilt thou that we go and gather them up ? 29 He saith, unto them No : lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest : and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind *them* in bundles to burn *them* : but gather the wheat into my barn. 31 Another parable spake he unto them, saying, The kingdom of the heavens

## According to Matthew.

heavens is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field. 32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is greater than herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of heaven come and lodge in the branches thereof. 33 Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdom of the heavens is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three seahs of meal, till the whole was leavened. 34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them: 35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. 36 Then he sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. 37 He answered and said, He that soweth the good seed is the son of man: 38 The field is the world: the good seed are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wicked one: 39 The enemy that sowed them, is the devil: the harvest is the end of the age: and the reapers are the angels. 40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this age: 41 The son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause offence, and them who do iniquity: 42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 43 Then shall the righteous shine as the sun, in the kingdom of their father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear: 44 The kingdom of the heavens is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a cer-

tain man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. 45 Again, the kingdom of the heavens is like unto a merchant-man, seeing goodly pearls: 46 But when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold what he had, and bought it. 47 Again, the kingdom of the heavens is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind. 48 Which when it was full, they drew it to the shore, and sat down, and gathered the best into vessels, but cast the bad away. 49 So shall it be at the end of the age: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just; 50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 51 Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yes, Lord. 52 He saith unto them, Therefore every scribe who is instructed in the kingdom of the heavens, is like unto a man that is an householder, who bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old. 53 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence. 54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man all this wisdom, and these mighty works? 55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and John, and Simon, and Judas? 56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man all these things? 57 And they were scandalized at him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. 58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

## According to Matthew.

XIV. Now at that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, 2 And said unto his servants, Is not this John the Baptist, whom I beheaded? he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do plainly shew forth themselves in him. 3 For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brothers wife. 4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her. 5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet. 6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, [the daughter of] Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod. 7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would ask. 8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists Head. 9 And the king being sorry, for the oaths: yet for the oaths sake, and for them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her. 10 And he sent and beheaded John in the prison. 11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother. 12 And his disciples came, and took up his dead body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus. 13 But when Jesus heard it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place, apart: and when the people had heard it, they followed him on foot out of the cities. 14 And he went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion for them, and he healed their sick. 15 And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the hour is now past; send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals. 16 But he said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat. 17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. 18 But he said, Bring them to me. 19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes. 20 And they all did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full. 21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children. 22 And straightway he constrained the disciples to get into a ship, and to go before unto the other side, while sent the multitudes away. 23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone. 24 But the ship was in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary. 25 And in the fourth watch of the night, he went unto them walking on the sea. 26 But when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, That it is an apparition; and they cried out for fear. 27 But straightway he spake unto them, saying, Be of good courage, It is I, be not afraid. 28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the waters. 29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the waters to come to Jesus. 30 But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. 31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? 32 And when they were gotten up  
C into

## According to Matthew.

into the ship, the wind ceased. 33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God. 34 And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. 35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were ill; 36 And besought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.

XV. Then came to him the scribes and Pharisees, from Jerusalem, saying, 2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. 3 But he answered and said, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? 4 For God said, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to father or mother, *It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me*, 6 He shall not relieve his father or mother. Thus have ye made the word of God of none effect by your tradition. 7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying, 8 This people honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me: 9 But in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines commandments of men. 10 And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and mind. 11 Not all that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man. 12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, knowest thou that the Pharisees were scandalized after they heard this saying? 13 But he answered and said, Every plant

which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. 14 Let these that are blind alone: they be blind leaders. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. 15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. 16 And he said, Are ye also yet without understanding? 17 Do not ye understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? 18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man. 19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemy. 20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man. 21 Then Jesus departed thence, and went away into the parts of Tyre and Sidon. 22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coast, and cried after him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a demon. 23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth behind us. 24 But he answered and said, I am not sent, but unto these lost sheep of the house of Israel. 25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26 But he answered and said, It is not lawful to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs. 27 And she said, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table. 28 Then he answered and said unto her, Woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour. 29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee,

## According to Matthew.

illee, and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. 30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, [dumb] maimed, and many others, and cast them down at his feet, and he healed them: 31 Inasmuch that the multitudes wondered when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, and the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel. 32 Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on this multitude, because it is now three days and they continue with me, and have not any thing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. 33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence then should we have so many loaves in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude? 34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they said unto him, Seven, and a few little fishes. 35 And when he had charged the multitude to sit down on the ground, 36 He took the seven loaves, and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. 37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that were left, seven baskets full. 38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, besides women and children. 39 And when he had sent away the multitude, he took ship, and came into the coasts of Magadan.

XVI. The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven. 2 But he answered and said, When it is evening, ye say, Fair weather: for the sky is red. 3 And in the morning Foul weather to day: for the heaven is red and lowering. Ye can discern the face of heaven, but can ye not the signs of the times? 4 A wicked generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonas. And he left them, and departed. 5 And when the disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take loaves. 6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees. 7 Then they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no loaves. 8 When Jesus perceived *it*, he said, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have no bread? 9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember when there were five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? 10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? 11 How, do ye not understand, that I spake *it* not concerning bread? Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees. 12 Then understood they that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees. 13 When Jesus came into the parts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked the disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I am; the Son of man? 14 And they said, John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets. 15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? 16 And Simon Peter answered and said unto him: Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. 17 But Jesus answered and said, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my father who is in the heavens. 18 And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, [a Rock] and upon this Rock will I build my church: and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 19 I will

## According to Matthew:

will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of the heavens: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in the heavens: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in the heavens. 20 Then charged he the disciples that they should tell no one that he was Christ Jesus. 21 From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after three days arise again. 22 Then Peter took him and began to rebuke him, and to say, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. 23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an Offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things of God, but of men. 24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any one will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross and follow me. 25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it. 26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 27 For the Son of man will come in the glory of his Father, with his holy angels; and then he shall reward every one according to his practice. 28 Verily I say unto you, There be some of those that stand here, who shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

XVII. And it came to pass after six days, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a very high mountain. 2 Being transfigured before them; His face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as snow. 3 And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with

him. 4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. 5 While he yet spake, behold a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. 6 But when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. 7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. 8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no one save Jesus only. 9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be raised from the dead. 10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come? 11 And he answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall come, and shall restore all things: 12 But I say you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. 13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist: Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. 14 And when he was come to the multitude, there came to him a man, kneeling down before him, and saying, 15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for sometimes he falleth into the fire, and often into the water. 16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him. 17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me. 18 And Jesus rebuked the demon, and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that

## According to Matthew.

that very hour. 19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? 20 And he saith unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye shall have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. 21 But this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting. 22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men: 23 And they shall kill him, and after three days he shall be raised: and they were exceeding sorry. 24 And when they were come to Capharnaum, they that received the half shekels came to Peter, and said unto him, Doth not your master pay the half shekels. 25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers? 26 He saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. 27 But lest we should give them offence, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find there a shekel: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

XVIII. At the same hour came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who then is the greatest in the kingdom of the heavens? 2 And Jesus called one little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, 3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of the heavens. 4 Whosoever therefore shall hum-

ble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of the heavens. 5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me. 6 But whoso shall afford scandal to one of these little ones who believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea. 7 Wo unto the world because of scandals: for it must needs be that scandals come: but wo to the man by whom the scandal cometh. 8 Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot afford scandal to thee, cut it off, and call it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into eternal fire. 9 And in like manner if thine eye afford scandal to thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into Gehenna. 10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones that believe on me; for I say unto you, that their angels in the heavens do always behold the face of my Father who is in the heavens. 11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. 12 But how think ye? if a man have an hundred Sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? 13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more for that, than for the ninety and nine which went not astray. 14 Even so it is not the will of our Father who is in the heavens, that one of these little ones should perish. 15 But if thy brother shall sin against thee, go, tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. 16 But if he will



## According to Matthew.

will not hear, take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three every word may be established. 17 And if he shall refuse to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he refuse to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man, and as a publican. 18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in the heavens: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in the heavens. 19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father who is in the heavens. 20 There are not two or three gathered together in my name, but I am in the midst of them. 21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? 22 Jesus said unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, until seventy times seven. 23 Therefore the kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, who would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him who owed him ten thousand talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, the lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 But that servant fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him an hundred denarii, and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay that thou owest. 29 And his fellow-servant fell down, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 When therefore his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: 33 Shouldst not thou also therefore have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had compassion on thee? 34 And his Lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay that which was due. 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother.

XIX. And it came to pass, that when Jesus had spoken these words, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan: 2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there. 3 The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and say unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every fault? 4 And he answered and said, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female? 5 And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they two shall be one flesh. 6 Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together into one, let not man put asunder. 7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a bill of divorce, and to put *her* away? 8 And he saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. 9 But I say unto you,

## According to Matthew.

you, Whoſoever ſhall put away his wife, except for the cauſe of fornication, and ſhall marry another, committeth adultery. 10 His diſciples ſay unto him, If the caſe of the man be ſo with his wife, it is not good to marry. 11 But he ſaid unto them, All men cannot receive this ſaying, ſave they to whom it is given. 12 For there are eunuchs, which were ſo born from their mother's womb : and there are eunuchs which were made eunuchs of men : and there are eunuchs which have made themſelves eunuchs for the kingdom of heavens ſake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it. 13 Then were brought unto him little children, that he ſhould put his hands on them, and pray : and the diſciples rebuked them. 14 But Jeſus ſaid unto them, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me : for of ſuch is the kingdom of the heavens. 15 And he laid hands on them, and departed thence. 16 And behold,

† Read  
Good  
Maſter.

† Read  
Why  
calleft  
thou me  
Good ?  
There is  
none  
good but  
one; God.

one came and ſaid unto him, † Maſter, what good things ſhall I do that I may have eternal life ? 17 And he ſaid unto him, † Why doſt thou ask me about a good thing ? there is one that is good : but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. 18 He ſaith unto him, Which ? And Jeſus ſaid thus, Thou ſhalt do no murder, Thou ſhalt not commit adultery, Thou ſhalt not ſteal, Thou ſhalt not bear falſe witneſs, 19 Honour father and mother : and, Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour as thyſelf. 20 The young man ſaith unto him, All theſe things have I kept from my youth up : what lack I yet ? 21 Jeſus ſaid unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go ſell that thou haſt, and give to the

poor, and thou ſhalt have treaſure in the heavens : and come follow me. 22 When the young man heard that ſaying, he went away ſorrowful : for he had great poſſeſſions. 23 Then ſaid Jeſus to his diſciples, Verily I ſay unto you, that a rich man ſhall hardly enter into the kingdom of the heavens. 24 And again I ſay unto you, It is eaſier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 25 But when the diſciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, and afraid, ſaying, Who then can be ſaved ? 26 But Jeſus beheld them, and ſaid unto them, With men this is impoſſible, but with God all things are poſſible. 27 Then answered Peter, and ſaid unto him, Behold, we have forſaken all, and followed thee ; what ſhall we have therefore ? 28 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Verily I ſay unto you, that ye which have followed me : In the regeneration, when the Son of man ſhall ſit in the throne of his glory, ye alſo ſhall your ſelves ſit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Iſrael. 29 And every one that hath forſaken houſe, or brethren, or ſiſters, [or father,] or mother, [or wife,] or children, or lands for my names ſake, ſhall receive an hundred-fold, and ſhall inherit eternal life. 30 But many firſt ſhall be laſt ; and the laſt firſt.

XX. For the kingdom of the heavens is like unto a man that is an houſholder, who went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. 2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a denarius a day, he ſent them into his vineyard. 3 And he went out about the third hour, and found others ſtanding idle in the market-place. 4 And ſaid unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard, and whatever is right, I will give you.

And

## According to Matthew:

And they went away. 5 But again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. 6 And about the eleventh he went out, and found others standing, and saith unto them, Why have ye stood here all the day idle? 7 They say unto him, Because no one hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into my vineyard. 8 And when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. 9 When therefore they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every one a denarius. 10 And when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, but they also received every one a denarius. 11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the master of the house, 12 Saying, That these last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, who have born the burden and heat of the day. 13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a denarius? 14 Take *what* is thine, and go away: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. 15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil because I am good? 16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for the called are many, but the chosen are few. 17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve apart in the way, and said unto them, 18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they will condemn him to death, 19 And will deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify: and the third day he will rise again. 20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her sons worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. 21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Give order that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdom. 22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of? They say, We are able. 23 Jesus saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup: but to sit on my right hand, and my left, is not mine to give, but to those for whom it is prepared of my Father. 24 And when the ten heard *it*, they had indignation against the two brethren. 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said unto them, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. 26 It is not so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister. 27 And whosoever will be chief among you, shall be your servant. 28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. But do you seek to increase from a little, and to be diminished from what is greater. However, when you are come and are desired to sup, do not you sit in the most eminent places, lest more honourable than thou come, and he that invited thee to supper come upon thee and say to thee, Go down still lower; and thou be put to confusion. But if thou sittest in a lower place, and one inferior to thee comes, he that invited thee will say to thee, Go and sit higher. For this will be to thy advantage. 29 And as they departed from Jericho, great multitudes followed him. 30 And behold,

## According to Matthew.

two blind men sitting by the way-side heard that Jesus passed by, and cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David. 31 And the multitude rebuked them, that they might hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David. 32 And Jesus stood, and called them, and said, What wilt thou that I do unto you? 33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. 34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately they received their sight, and followed him.

XXI. And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, 2 Saying unto them, Go in to the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me. 3 And if any man say unto you, What do ye? ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them. 4 This was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, 5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. 6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them. 7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on him clothes, and he sat upon him. 8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. 9 And the multitudes that went before him, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest. 10 And when he was come into Je-

rusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? 11 And many said, This is Jesus, the prophet of Nazareth, of Galilee. 12 And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves. 13 And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves. 14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them. 15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they had indignation, 16 And said unto him, Hearst thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yes; have ye never read, Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise? 17 And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there. 18 Now in the morning as he passed by into the city, he hungered. 19 And when he saw one fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away. 20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away? 21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this to the fig-tree, but if ye shall say also unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done. 22 And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive. 23 And when he was come into temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto

## According to Matthew:

unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority dost thou these things? and who gave thee this authority? 24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one word, which if ye tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things. 25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? and they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not believe him? 26 But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. 27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We know not. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. 28 But what think you? A man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in the vineyard. 29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented and went into the vineyard. 30 But he came to the other, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir; and went not. 31 Whether of them two did the will of his father? They say, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. 32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him. And ye when ye had seen ~~us~~, repented: ~~not~~ afterward, that ye might believe him. 33 Hear another parable: There was an householder who planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went away. 34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they

might receive the fruits of it. 35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. 36 Again therefore, he sent other servants, more than the first: and they did unto them likewise. 37 But last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. 38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. 39 And they caught him, and slew him, and cast him out of the vineyard: 40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto those husbandmen? 41 They say unto him, He will miserable destroy those wicked men, and will let out the vineyard to other Husbandmen, who shall render him the fruits in their seasons. 42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, he is become the head of the corner? this *head* is the Lord's doing, and is marvelous in our eyes. 43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. 45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. 46 But when they sought to lay hold on him, they feared the multitudes, because they took him for a prophet.

XXII. And Jesus answered and spake unto them again in parables, and said, 1 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, who made a marriage feast for his son, 3 And sent forth his servants, to call them that were invited to the marriage feast; and they would not come. 4 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, tell them who are invited, Behold I have prepared

## According to Matthew.

my dinner : my oxen and farlings **are** killed, and all things **are** ready : come unto the marriage feast. 5 But they made light of *it*, and went their ways, some to their field, and others to their merchandise : 6 And the remnant took his servants, and treated *them* injuriously, and slew *them*. 7 When the king heard *it*, he was wroth : and he sent forth his army, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city. 8 Then saith he to his servants, the marriage feast is ready, but they who were invited were not worthy. 9 Go ye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast. 10 So his Servants went out into the high-ways, and gathered together all those that they found, both bad and good : and the marriage feast was furnished with guests. 11 And when the king came to see the guests, he saw there a man who had not on a wedding-garment : 12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou hither, not having a wedding-garment ? And he was speechless. 13 Then said the king to his servants, Take him by his hands and feet, and cast *him* into outer darkness : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14 For the called are many, but the chosen are few. 15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in talk. 16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and reachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man : for thou regardest not the person of men. 17 What thinkest thou ? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not ? 18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites ? 19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him a denarius. 20 Jesus saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription ? 21 They say unto him, Cæsars. Then saith he unto them, Render unto Cesar, the things which are Cæsars ; and, unto God, the things which are Gods. 22 When they heard *it*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way. 23 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection, and asked him, 24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, that his brother shall marry his wife, and shall raise up seed unto his brother. 25 There were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no seed, left his wife to his brother. 26 Likewise the second, and the third, unto the seven. 27 And last of all the woman died also. 29 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven ? for they all had her. 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. 30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage ; but are as the angels in heaven. 31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ? He is not the God of the dead, but of the living. 33 And when the multitudes heard *it*, they were astonished at his doctrine. 34 But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered to him. 35 Then one of them, a lawyer, asked a question, tempting him, and saying, 36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law ? 37 Jesus saith unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy

## According to Matthew.

heart, and with all thy soul; and with all thy mind. 38 This is the first and great commandment. 39 And the second is like unto this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self. 40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. 41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, 42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, Of David. 43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying, 44 The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I put thine enemies beneath thy feet. 45 If David then in the spirit, call him Lord, how is he his son? 46 And no one was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that hour ask him any more questions.

**XXIII.** Then spake Jesus to the multitudes, and to his disciples, 2 Saying, The scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses seat. 3 All therefore whatsoever they say to you, observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. 4 For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay on men's shoulders, but they themselves will not move them with their finger. 5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: For they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge their borders. 6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, 7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men Rabbi, Rabbi. 8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, and all ye are brethren. 9 And you shall not call any one your father upon the earth: for one is your Father who is in the heavens. 10 Neither be ye called masters: For one is your Master Christ. 11 He that is greatest among you, shall be

your servant. 12 And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted. 13 But wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because ye shut up the kingdom of the heavens before men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to enter. 15 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compass sea and land, that ye may make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of Gehenna than your selves. 16 Wo unto you, ye blind guides, who say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. 17 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold or the temple that hath sanctified the gold? 18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is a debtor. 19 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? 20 Who therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. 21 And who shall have sworn by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelt therein. 22 And he that shall have sworn by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. 23 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. 24 Ye blind guides, who strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. 25 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye make clean the outside of the cup and

## According to John.

am the light of the world. 6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed his eyes with the clay. 7 And said, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is interpreted Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing. 8 The neighbours therefore, and they who before had seen him, that he was a beggar, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? 9 Some said, This is he: others, He is like him: He said himself, I am he. 10 Therefore said they unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to Siloam, and wash: I went therefore and washed, and came seeing. 12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said to them, I know not. 13 And they bring him that aforetime was blind to the Pharisees. 14 And it was the sabbath when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. But He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. 16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he observeth not the sabbath. But others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them. 17 They said therefore unto the blind man, What sayst thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? But He said, He is a prophet. 18 The Jews did not believe concerning him, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. 19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how therefore doth he now see? 20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 21 But by that means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself. 22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any one should confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. 23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him. 24 They called again him that was blind, a second time, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. 25 He answered therefore, Whether he be a sinner I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I had been blind, now I see. 26 They said therefore to him, What did he to thee? and how opened he thine eyes? 27 But he said, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? 28 But they reviled him, and said Thou art his disciple; We are Moses disciples. 29 We know that God hath spoken unto Moses, and that God heareth not sinners. As for this man, we know not whence he is. 30 The man answered and said, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and he hath opened mine eyes. 31 We know that God heareth not sinners: but if any one be a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth. 32 From the beginning it hath not been heard that any one opened the eyes of one that was born blind. 33 If this man were not of God he could do nothing. 34 They answered him, and said, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out. 35 And Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and he found him and said, Dost thou believe on the Son of man? 36 He answered,

And



## According to Matthew.

holy place, whoſo readeth, let him mind it. 16 Then let thoſe in Judea, flee unto the mountains. 17 But let him who is on the houſe-top, not come down to take any thing out of the houſe: 18 Neither let him who is in the field return back to take his garment. 19 And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give ſuck in thoſe days. 20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the ſabbath-day: 21 For then ſhall be great tribulation, ſuch as was not ſince the beginning of the world to this time, nor may they ever be again. 22 And except thoſe days ſhould be ſhortned, there ſhall no fleſh eſcape: but for the elects ſake thoſe days ſhall be ſhortned. 23 Then if any man ſhall ſay unto you, Lo, here is the Chriſt, or there: ye ſhall not believe *it*. 24 For there will be raiſed falſe Chriſts, and falſe prophets, and will ſhew great ſigns and wonders, inſomuch that if poſſible the very elect ſhould be deceived. 25 Behold, I have told you before. 26 Wherefore, if they ſhall ſay unto you, Behold, he is in the deſert, go not forth: behold, *he is* in the ſecret chambers, believe *it* not. 27 For as the lightning cometh out of the eaſt, and ſhineth unto the weſt: ſo ſhall the coming of the Son of man be. 28 Whereſoever the carcaſe is, there will the eagles alſo be gathered together. 29 Immediately after the tribulation of thoſe days, ſhall the ſun be darkned, and the moon ſhall not give its light, and the ſtars ſhall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens ſhall be ſhaken. 30 And then ſhall appear the ſign of the Son of man who is in the heavens, and then ſhall all the tribes of the land mourn, and they ſhall ſee the Son of man coming upon the clouds of heaven, with great power and glory. 31 And he ſhall ſend his angels

with a trumpet, of a great ſound and they ſhall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of the heavens to the other. And when theſe things begin to come to paſs, Look up, and lift up your heads for your redemption draweth nigh. 32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When its branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that ſummer *is* nigh: 33 So likewiſe ye, when ye ſhall ſee all theſe things, know that it is near, at the doors. 34 Verily I ſay unto you, that this generation ſhall not paſs, till all theſe things be fulfilled. 35 Heaven and earth ſhall paſs away, but my words ſhall not paſs away. 36 But of that day and hour knoweth no one, no, not the Angels of the heavens, neither the Son, but the Father only. 37 For as the dayſ of Noe *were*, ſo ſhall alſo the coming of the Son of be. 38 For as they were in thoſe days before the flood, eating and drinking, both marrying and giving in marriage, until the day when Noe entered into the ark. 39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; ſo ſhall the coming of the Son of man be. 40 Then ſhall two be in the field, the one is taken, and the other left. 41 Two ~~women~~ *women ſhall be* grinding at the mill, the one is taken, and the other left. Two ſhall be upon one bed; the one ſhall be taken, and the other left: Watch therefore, for ye know not what day the Lord cometh. 43 But know this, that if the maſter of the houſe had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken up. 44 Therefore be ye alſo ready: for in ſuch an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh. 45 For who is a faithful and wiſe ſervant, whom the Lord hath made ruler over his houſhold,

## According to Matthew.

to give them meat in season? 46 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall find so doing. 47 Verily I say unto you, that he shall set him over all his goods. 48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth to come. 49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken. 50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he knoweth not. 51 And shall cut him in sunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

XXV. Then shall the kingdom of the heavens be likened unto ten virgins, who took their own lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom and bride. 2. And five of them were foolish and five wise. 3. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oyl with them in their vessels. 4 But the wise took oyl with their lamps. 5 But while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. 6 And at midnight there was a cry made Behold, the bridegroom! go ye out to meet him. 7 Then all these virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. 8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are gone out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so. lest there be not enough for us and you: Goe rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves. 10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage feast, and the door was shut. 11 Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. 12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the

hour. 14 As a man travelling abroad, called his own servants and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every one according to his ability, and straightway took his journey. 16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with them and gained other five talents. 17 And likewise he that had received the two talents, he also gained other two. 18 But he that had received one, digged in the earth and hid his lord's money. 19 After a long time, the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. 20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliverdest unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant; because thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord. 22 He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliverdest unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents. 23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 24 Then he who had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering from whence thou hast not strawed: 25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast thy talent. 26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: 27 Thou

## According to Matthew.

oughtest therefore to have put my  
 money to the exchangers, and then  
 at my coming I should have receiv-  
 ed mine own with usury. 28 Take  
 therefore the talent from him, and  
 give it unto him who hath the five  
 talents. 29 For unto him that hath  
 shall be given, and he shall have a-  
 bundance: but of him that hath  
 not shall be taken away, even that  
 which he hath. 30 And cast ye  
 forth the unprofitable servant into  
 outer darkness: there shall be  
 weeping and gnashing of teeth.  
 31 When the Son of man shall come  
 in his glory, and all the angels  
 with him, then shall he sit upon  
 the throne of his glory. 32 And  
 before him shall be gathered all na-  
 tions; and he shall separate them  
 one from another, as a shepherd di-  
 videth his sheep from the goats: 33  
 And he shall set the sheep on his  
 right hand, but the goats on the  
 left. 34 Then shall the king say  
 unto them on his right hand, Come,  
 ye blessed of my Father, inherit  
 the kingdom prepared for you from  
 the foundation of the World. 35  
 For I was an hungred, and ye gave  
 me meat: I was thirsty, and ye  
 gave me drink: I was a stranger,  
 and ye took me in: 36 Naked, and  
 ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye  
 visited me: I was in prison, and ye  
 came unto me. 37 Then shall the  
 righteous answer him, saying,  
 Lord, when saw we thee an  
 hungred, and fed thee? or  
 thirsty, and gave thee drink? 38  
 When saw we thee a stranger, and  
 took thee in? and naked, and  
 clothed thee? 39 Or when saw  
 we thee sick, or in prison, and  
 came unto thee? 40 And the King  
 shall answer, and say unto them,  
 Verily I say unto you, In as much  
 as ye have done it unto one of the  
 least of these my brethren, ye have  
 done it unto me. 41 Then shall  
 he say also unto them on the left

hand, Depart from me, ye cursed,  
 into eternal fire; which my Father  
 hath prepared for the devil and his  
 angels. 42 For I was an hungred,  
 and ye gave me no meat: I was  
 thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: 43  
 I was a stranger, and ye took me  
 not in: naked, and ye clothed me  
 not: sick, and in prison, and ye  
 visited me not. 44 Then shall they  
 answer, saying, Lord, When saw  
 we thee an hungred, or athirst, or  
 a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in  
 prison, and did not minister unto  
 thee? 45 Then shall he answer  
 them, saying, Verily I say unto  
 you, In as much as ye have not  
 done it to one of the least of these,  
 ye have not done it to me. 46 And  
 these shall go away into eternal pu-  
 nishment: but the righteous into  
 eternal life.

XXVI. And it came to pass,  
 when Jesus had finished all these  
 sayings, he said unto the disciples,  
 2 Ye know that after two days is  
 the passover, and the Son of man  
 is betrayed to be crucified. 3  
 Then assembled together the chief  
 priests, and the elders of the peo-  
 ple, unto the palace of the high  
 priest, who was called Caiphas. 4  
 And consulted that they might take  
 Jesus by deceit, and kill him. 5  
 But they said, Not on the feast, lest  
 there be an uprore among the peo-  
 ple. 6 Now when Jesus was in  
 Bethany, in the house of Simon  
 the leper, 7 There came unto him  
 a woman having an alabaster-box of  
 very precious ointment, and pour-  
 ed it on his head, as he sat. 8 But  
 when the disciples saw it, they had  
 indignation, saying, To what pur-  
 pose is this waste? 9 For it might  
 have been sold for much, and given  
 to the poor. 10 When Jesus un-  
 derstood it, he said unto them, Why  
 trouble ye the woman? for she  
 hath wrote a good work upon me.  
 11 For ye have the poor always  
 with

## According to Matthew.

with you, but me ye have not always. 12 For she hath poured this ointment on my body, and she did it for my burial. 13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her. 14 Then one of the twelve, called Judas Scarioth, went unto the chief priests, 15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of Silver. 16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him unto them. 17 Now the first day of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus saying, Where wilt thou that we shall prepare for thee to eat the passover? 18 And he said, Go into the city to such a one, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples. 19 And the disciples did as Jesus had ordered them, and they made ready the passover. 20. Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve. 21. And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you will betray me. 22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say, Lord, is it I? 23 And he answered and said, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same will betray me. 24 Therefore the Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it had been good on this account for that man if he had not been born. 25 Then Judas, who betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said. 26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to the

disciples, and said, Take, eat; this my body. 27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it: 28 For this is my blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. 29 But I say unto you, that I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's Kingdom. 30 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out, into the mount of Olives. 31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye will be scandalized because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered abroad. 32 But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee. 33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be scandalized because of thee, I will never be scandalized. 34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou wilt deny me thrice. 35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I in no wise deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples. 36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsamane, and saith unto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder. 37 And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful, and very heavy. 38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful even unto death: tarry ye here and watch with me. 39 And he came a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt. 40 And he cometh unto his disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter,

## According to Matthew.

Peter, Could ye not thus watch with me one hour? 41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. 42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away, except I drink it, thy will be done. 43 and when he came again he found them asleep: for their eyes were heavy. 44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed, saying the same words. 45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me. 47 But while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people. 48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast. 49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail master; and kissed him. 50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him. 51 And behold one of them who were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear. 52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword. 53 Or thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? 54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? 55 Is that same holy

said Jesus to the multitude, Are ye come as against a thief with swords and staves to take me? I sit daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me. 56 But all this hath been done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. 57 And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiphias the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. 58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end. 59 Now the chief priests, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus to put him to death. 60 But found it not: yea, and when it came they found it not. At the last came two false witnesses. 61 And said we have heard this man say, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. 62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what do these witnesses against thee? 63 But Jesus held his peace. The high priest therefore answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. 64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: moreover I say unto you, that hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. 65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. 66 What think ye? They all answered and said, He is guilty of death. 67 Then did they spit in his face, and buffet him, and others smote him with the palms of their hands. 68 Saying, Pro-

phesie

## According to Matthew.

phesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee? 69 Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee. 70 But he denied before them all saying, I know not nor understand what thou sayst. 71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This man was with Jesus of Nazareth. 72 And again he denied with an oath saying I do not know the man. 73 And a little after came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou art one of them, for thy speech resembles their's. 74 Then began he to curse and to swear, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew. 75 And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, who said, Before the cock crow, thou wilt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

XXVII. And when the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people made a council against Jesus to put him to death. 2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor. 3 Then Judas who had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders; 4 Saying, I have sinned; in that I have betrayed righteous blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. 6 And the chief priests took the pieces of silver and said, It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood. 7 And they took counsel and bought the potters field, to

bury strangers in: 8 Wherefore that field was called, Echeldemach that is The field of blood unto this day. 9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; 10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me. 11 And Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? and Jesus said unto him, Thou sayst. 12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. 13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? 14 And he answered him not one word, inasmuch that the governor marvelled greatly. 15 Now at the feast the governor was wont to release unto the People one prisoner, whom they would. 16 And they had then a noted prisoner, called Barabbas. 17 But when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, who is called Christ? 18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him. 19 When he was sat down on the Judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous one, for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him. 20 But the chief priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. 21 The governor answered and said unto them, Which of the two will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas. 22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall we do then with Jesus, who is called Christ? They all say, Let him be crucified. 23 And

## According to Matthew.

And the governor said, What evil have they done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified. 24 When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this man; you shall see it. 25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. 26 Then released he Barabbas unto them; and when he had scourged Jesus he delivered him to them that they might crucify him. 27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band. 28 And they stripped him of his clothes, and put on him a purple garment, and a scarlet robe. 29 And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it on his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they bowed the knees before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, king of the Jews. 30 And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head. 31 And when they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him. 32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name coming to meet him: him they compelled to take his cross. 33 And when they were come unto the place Golgotha, that is to say, the place of a skull, 34 They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall; and when he had tasted he would not drink. 35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots. 36 And sitting down, they watched him. 37 And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. 38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left. 39 And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their head, 40 And saying, We! Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself if thou be the Son of God, and come down from the cross. 41 Likewise also the Scribes and Pharisees, mocking him, said, 42 He saved others, himself he cannot save; let him now come down from the cross and we will believe him. 43 If he trusted in God let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. 44 The thieves also who were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth. 45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour. 46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying *Eli, Eli, lama Zaphthani?* that is to say, My God, my God why hast thou forsaken me; 47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias. 48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. 49 The rest said, Let him alone, let us see whether Elias will come and save him. 50 Jesus when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. 51 And behold the vail of the temple was rent in two from the top to the bottom, and the earth did quake, and the rocks were rent. 52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of saints which slept were raised, 53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. 54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earth

## According to Matthew,

earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God. 55 And many women were there beholding afar off which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him. 56 Among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and of Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's children. 57 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: 58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. 59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, 60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. 61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre. 62 Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, 63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, that after three days I will rise. 64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. 65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way make it sure as you know how to do. 66 So they went and made the sepulchre sure, scaling the stone, with a watch.

XXVIII. In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre. 2 And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and sat upon it. 3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. 4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead. 5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, who was crucified. 6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come see the place where the Lord lay. 7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he is risen; and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him; I have told you. 8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word. 9 And behold, Jesus met them, saying, Hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. 10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall ye see me. 11 Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and related unto the chief priests all the things that were done. 12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers. 13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this be heard by the governor, we will persuade him, and secure you. 15 So they took the pieces of silver, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day. 16 Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, unto a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped: but some doubted. 18 And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me



## According to Matthew:

me in heaven and on earth. 19 Teaching them to observe all things, Go ye now and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them unto the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: 20

Teaching them to observe all things, whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the age.

*The Gospel according to Matthew is finished.*

*The Gospel according to John begins.*

## The Gospel according to JOHN.

### CHAP. I.

**I**N the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made. 4 And in him was life, and the life is the light of men. 5 And the light appeareth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not. 6 There was a man sent from God, his name was John. 7 He came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all through him might believe. 8 He was not the light, but was to bear witness of the light. 9 He was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. 10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. 11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not. 12 As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God; to them that believe on his name: 13 They were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. 14 And the Word was made flesh, and pitched his tabernacle among us, and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth. 15 John bare witness of him, and cried, This was he of whom I spake to you. He that cometh after me, was made before me;

for he was preferred to me. 16 For of his fulness have all we received and grace for grace. 17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth by Jesus Christ. 18 No one hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him. 19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to him to ask him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou the prophet? And he answered, No. 22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us: what sayst thou of thyself? 23 He said I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias. 24 And they who were sent, were of the Pharisees. 25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not the Christ, nor Elias, neither the prophet? 26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not; 27 He it is, who coming after me, was made before me, whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose. 28 These things were done in Bethany

## According to John.

‡ read Bethabara. ‡ Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing. 29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world. 30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, who is made before me : for he was before me. 31 And I knew him not : but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing in water. 32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. 33 And I knew him not : but he that sent me to baptize in water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he who baptizeth in the Holy Ghost. 34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God. 35 Again, the next day, John stood, and two of his disciples : 36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God. 37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. 38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, which is to say, being interpreted, Master, where dwellest thou? 39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day : for it was about the tenth hour. 40 Now one of the two which heard John, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother. 41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. 42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jonas : thou shalt be called Cephas, which is interpreted a Rock. 43 The day following, He would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip ; and Jesus saith unto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses did write in the law, and the prophets, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. 46 And Nathanael said unto him, can any good thing be from Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, come and see. 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile. 48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee. 49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel. 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou wilt see a greater thing than these. 51 And he saith unto him, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

II. And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee ; and the mother of Jesus was there. 2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. 3 And when wine was wanting the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. 4 And Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what is that to me and thee? mine hour is not yet come. 5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. 6 And there were set there six stone water pots, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three metretres apiece.

7 Jesus

## According to John:

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. 8 And Jesus saith unto them, Draw out now and bear unto the steward of the feast. And they bear it. 9 When the steward of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, but the servants who drew the water knew, the steward of the feast called the bridegroom, 10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when they have well drunk, then that which is worse; But thou hast kept the good wine until now. 11 This beginning of signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him. 12 After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many days. 13 And the Jews passover was nigh, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, 14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting: 15 And when he had made, as it were a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen; and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables; 16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; And make not my Fathers house an house of merchandize. 17 And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. 18 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, that thou dost these things? 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. 20 Then said the Jews, Forty and six years has this temple been built, and wilt thou

21 But he spake of the temple of his body. 22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this: and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said. 23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast, many believed on his name, when they saw the signs which he did. 24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all, 25 And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

III. Now there was a man of the Pharisees, his name was Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: 2 He came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no one can do these miracles that thou dost, except God were with him. 3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except any one be  $\pm$  born, from above he cannot see  $\pm$  born again, Vulg: of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Holy Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh: and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born from above,  $\pm$  born again. Vulg: 8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, or whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? 10 Jesus

## According to John:

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? 11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our testimony. 12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I shall tell you heavenly things? 13 And no one hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, the Son of man who is in heaven. 14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15 That every one who believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternal life. 16 For God hath so loved the world, that he hath given his only begotten Son, that every one who believeth on him, should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 For God sent not his Son unto the world to judge the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him shall not be judged: but he that believeth not, is judged already, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the judgement, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. 20 For every one that doth evil things hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved by the light. 21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. 22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them, and baptized. 23 And John also was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim: because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. 24 For John was not yet cast into prison: 25 Now there arose a question between some of Johns disciples and the Jews, about purifying. 26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, He baptizeth, and all come to him. 27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. 28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I ~~am~~ not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. 29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, who standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegrooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He must increase, but I must be diminished. 31 But he that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth. He that cometh from heaven, testifieth, what he hath seen and heard, and no one receiveth his testimony. 32 He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal, that God is true. 33 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth ~~him~~ not the Spirit by measure. 34 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. 35 That he who believeth on the Son, may have eternal life: But he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

IV. When therefore the Lord Jesus knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, 2 Though Jesus himself baptized not, but the disciples 3 He left the land of Judea, and departed again into Galilee. 4 And he must needs go through Samaria. 5 He cometh then to a city of Samaria, which

## According to John

is called Sychar, near to the parcel place where men ought to worship  
of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. 6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus therefore being wearied with the journey, sat thus on the well: and it was the sixth hour. 7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. 8 For his disciples were gone unto the city to buy provisions. 9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Jew, askest drink of me, a woman of Samaria? 10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who he is that saith to thee, Give me to drink, thou wouldest have asked him, and he would have given thee living water. 11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast no bucket and the well is deep: Whence hast thou that living water? 12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and cattle? 13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water will thirst again: 14 But whosoever shall drink of the water that I shall give him, will never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, will be in him a fountain of water springing up into eternal life. 15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I may not thirst, neither come hither to draw. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, thou hast no husband: 18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in what saidst thou truly. 19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the

place where men ought to worship: 21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father. 22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship; for salvation is of the Jews. 23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. 24 God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship in spirit and in truth. 25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, who is called Christ: when he shall come, he will tell us all things. 26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he. 27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no one said to him, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her? 28 The woman then left her water pot, and went away into the city, and saith to the men, 29 Come, see a man who told me all things that ever I did: is not he the Christ? 30 And they went out of the city, and came unto him. 31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. 32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. 33 Therefore said the disciples among themselves, Hath any man brought him ought to eat? 34 Jesus saith unto them, My food is that I may do the will of him that sent me, and finish his work. 35 Say not ye, There are four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are already white to harvest. 36 He that reapeth receiveth wages, and ga hereof fruit unto himself, and he that reapeth, may rejoice together. 37 And herein

## According to John.

is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. 38 I sent you to reap: Ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours. 39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him; for the word of the woman which testified, He told me all that ever I did. 40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would abide with them; and he abode there two days. 41 And many more believed because of his own word: 42 And said unto the woman, We do not now believe because of thy testimony; for we have heard him our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world. 43 But after two days he departed thence, into Galilee: 44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. 45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast. 46 So he came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. But there was a certain noble man, whose son was sick at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. 48 Therefore said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders ye will not believe. 49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come down ere the child die. 50 Jesus saith unto him, Go, thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him; and he went. 51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, that Thy son liveth. 52 Then enquired he of them the hour, when he

began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. 53 So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth; and himself believed, and his whole house. 54 This again is the second miracle Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

V. After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Belsetha, having five cloisters. 3 In these lay a multitude of impotent folk, blind, halt, withered; paralyticks waiting for the moving of the water. 4 But a man was there, who had lived thirty and eight years in his infirmity. 6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time so, he saith to him, Wilt thou be made whole? 7 The impotent man saith to him, Sir, I have not a man, when the water is troubled to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another stepeth down before me. 8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, and take up thy couch and walk. 9 And the man was made whole, rose up, and took up his couch and walked: and on that day was the sabbath. And the Jews said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day; it is not lawful for thee to take up thy couch. 11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy couch and walk. 12 They asked him: What man is he who said unto thee, Take up thy couch and walk? 13 He that was infirm knew not who it was; for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in the place. 14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole;

## According to John.

In no more, left a worse thing  
 come unto thee. 15 The man  
 therefore departed, and told the  
 Jews that it was Jesus who had  
 made him whole. 16 And there-  
 fore did the Jews persecute Jesus,  
 because he had done these things on  
 the sabbath. 17 But Jesus answer-  
 ed them, My father worketh hither-  
 to, and I work. 18 The Jews  
 therefore the more sought to kill  
 him, because he not only had bro-  
 ken the sabbath, but said also that  
 God was his Father, making him-  
 self equal with God. 19 Then  
 answered Jesus and said unto them,  
 Verily verily, I say unto you, The  
 Son of man cannot do any thing  
 of himself, but what he seeth the Fa-  
 ther do; for what things soever he  
 shall do, these also doth the Son  
 likewise. 20 For the Father loveth  
 the Son, and sheweth him all things  
 that himself doth: and he sheweth  
 him greater works than these, that  
 ye may marvel. 21 For as the  
 Father raiseth up the dead, and  
 quickneth them; even so the Son  
 quickneth whom he will. 22 For  
 the Father judgeth no man; but  
 hath given all judgment unto  
 the Son: 23 That all should  
 honour the Son, even as they honour  
 the Father. He that honoureth  
 not the Son, neither honoureth he  
 the Father who hath sent him. 24  
 Verily verily I say unto you, He  
 that heareth my word, and be-  
 lieveth on him that sent me, hath  
 eternal life, and shall not come in-  
 to judgement; but is passed from  
 death unto life. 25 Verily verily I  
 say unto you, That the hour cometh  
 and now is, when the dead shall  
 hear the voice of the Son of God;  
 and they that hear shall live. 26  
 For as the living Father hath life  
 in himself; so hath he given to the  
 Son to have life in himself: 27  
 And hath given him authority to  
 execute judgement, because he is  
 the Son of man. 28 Marvel not  
 at this; for the hour cometh in  
 which all that are in the graves  
 shall hear his voice. 29 And shall  
 come forth; they that have done  
 good, unto the resurrection of life;  
 and they that do evil, unto the re-  
 surrection of condemnation. 30 I  
 can of mine own self do nothing: as I  
 hear, I judge: and my judgment  
 is just; because I seek not mine own  
 will, but the will of him that sent  
 me. 31 If I bear witness of my  
 self, my witness is not true. 32  
 There is another that beareth wit-  
 ness of me, and ye know that his  
 testimony which he witnesseth of  
 me, is true. 33 Ye sent unto John,  
 and he bare witness unto the truth.  
 34 But I receive not testimony from  
 men; but these things I say, that  
 ye might be saved. 35 He was a  
 burning and shining light; and ye  
 were willing for a season to rejoyce  
 in his light. 36 But I have a  
 greater testimony than that of John:  
 for the works which the Father hath  
 given me to finish the same works  
 that I do, bear witness of me, that  
 my Father hath sent me. 37 And  
 the Father who hath sent me, he  
 himself beareth witness of me. Ye  
 have neither heard his voice, nor  
 seen his shape. 38 And ye have  
 not his word abiding in you: for  
 whom he hath sent, him ye believe  
 not. 39 Search the scriptures, for  
 in them ye think ye have eternal  
 life, and they are they which testi-  
 fie of me. 40 And ye will not  
 come to me, that ye might have  
 life eternal. 41 I receive not  
 honour from men. 42 But I know  
 you, that ye have not the love of  
 God in you. 43 I am come in my  
 Fathers name, and ye receive me  
 not: if another shall come in his own  
 name, him ye will receive. 44  
 How can ye believe, who receive  
 honour one of another, and seek  
 not the honour that is from God  
 only? 45 Do not think that I will  
 accuse you to the Father; there is  
 that accuseth you, Moses, in whom  
 ye have trusted. 46 For had ye  
 believed

## According to John.

believed Moses, ye would also have believed me : for he wrote of me. 46 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

VI. After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, unto the parts of Tiberias. 2 But a great multitude followed him, because they saw the miracles which he did on them that were diseased. 3 Jesus therefore went away into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples. 4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh. 5 When Jesus then lift up *his* eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith also unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? 6 And this he said to prove him : for he himself knew what he would do. 7 Philip answered him, So much bread as two hundred denarii will buy is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little. 8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, who hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes : but what are they among so many? 10 Jesus said therefore, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand. 11 Jesus therefore took the five loaves, and when he had given thanks he distributed to them that were set down ; and likewise of the fishes also, as much as they would. 12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing thereof may be lost. 13 But they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley-loaves, which remained over and above, unto them that had eaten. 14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that he did, said, This is that prophet that should come into the world. 15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they were about to come and take him by force, to make *him* a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone, and there prayed. 16 And when even was come, his disciples went down unto the sea. 17 And entered into a ship, and went to the other side of the sea to Capharnaum, and darkness had already overtaken them, and Jesus was not come to them. 18 But the sea was rough, a great wind blowing. 19. So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship ; and they were afraid. 20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid. 21 They would therefore receive him into the ship, and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went. 22 The day following, when the multitude who stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was no other boat there, save one whereinto Jesus's own disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone : 23 Howbeit other boats came from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread. 24 When the multitude therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they took boats for themselves, and came to Capharnaum, seeking for Jesus. 25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi ; when camest thou hither? 26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me ; not because ye saw the signs and wonders, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. 27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto eternal life, which the Son of man giveth



## According to John.

giveth unto you : for him hath God the Father sealed. 28 Then said they unto him, What shall we work that we may do the works of God ? 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye may believe on him whom he hath sent. 30 They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee ? what thou dost work ? 31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert ; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. 32 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven ; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. 33 For the bread of God is he who cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. 34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. 35 Jesus therefore said unto them, I am the bread of life ; he that cometh to me, shall not hunger at all ; and he that believeth on me, shall not thirst at all. 36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not. 37 All that the Father giveth me, will come to me ; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast away. 38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of the father that sent me. 39 And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but that I should raise it up again at the last day. 40 For this is the will of my Father that sent me, that every one who seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have eternal life ; and I will raise him up at the last day. 41 But the Jews murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know ? how is it then that he saith, that I came down from heaven ? 43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among your selves. 44 No one can come to me, except the Father who hath sent me, draw him : and I will raise him up at the last day. 45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every one that heareth, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. 46 Not that any one hath seen the Father, save he who is of God, he hath seen God. 47 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath eternal life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers did eat bread and manna in the wilderness, and are dead. 50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that if a man eat thereof, he shall not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven ; if therefore any one shall eat of this bread, he shall live for ever : The bread that I will give, is my flesh, for the life of the world. 52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can he give us his flesh to eat ? 53 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Except ye take the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. 54 Whoso eateth his flesh, and drinketh his blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For my flesh is meat indeed. 56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the father is in me, so I am in the father ; Verily, verily I say unto you unless ye take the body of the Son of Man as the bread of life, ye have not life in him. 57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father : so he that taketh me, even he shall live by me. 58 This is that

## According to John.

that bread which came down from heaven : not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead : he that eateth this bread, shall live for ever. 59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught, in Capharnaum on the Sabbath. 60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard it, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it? 61 When Jesus knew that his disciples murmured at it among themselves, he said unto them, Dost this scandalize you? 62 If therefore ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? 63 It is the spirit that quickneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you, are spirit, are life. 64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who would betray him. 65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no one can come unto me, except it were given unto him of the Father. 66 From this time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. 67 But Jesus said to the twelve, Will ye also go away? 68 But Simon Peter said, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we have believed, and have known thee, that thou art the Holy One of God. 70 Jesus answered, saying, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? 71 He spake of Judas Scarioth the son of Simon: for he was to betray him, being one of the twelve.

VII. After these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him. 2 Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand. 3 His bretheren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou dost. 4 For no one doth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to have it known openly: If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world. 5 For neither did his brethren believe in him. 6 Jesus saith unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. 7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. 8 Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up unto this feast, for my time is not yet full come. 9 When he had said these words, he himself abode in Galilee. 10 But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but in secret. 11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? 12 And there was a murmuring among the multitude concerning him: Some said, He is a good man: others said, No; but he deceiveth the people. 13 Howbeit, no one spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews. 14 Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught: 15 The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having not learned them. 16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any one will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or I speak of my self. 18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, he is true, and unrighteousness is not in him. 19 Did not Moses give you the law? and none of you keepeth the law, Why do ye seek to kill me? 20 The multitude answered and said, Thou hast a demon: who seeketh to kill thee? 21 Jesus answered and said, I have done one work, and

## According to John.

and ye all marvel at it, 22 Moses gave unto you circumcision : not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers : and ye on the sabbath circumsise a man. 23. If therefore a man on the sabbath receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken ; how are ye angry at me, because I have perfectly cured a man on the sabbath ? 24 Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment. 25 Some therefore of them of Jerusalem, said, Is not this he whom they seek to kill ? 26 But he, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing unto him : do the rulers know indeed that this is the Christ ? 27 But we know him whence he is : but when Christ shall come, no one knoweth whence he is. 28 Jesus therefore cryed as he taught, in the Temple saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am : and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me. 30 Then they sought to take him : but no man laid hand on him, because his hour was not yet come. 31 And many of the multitude believed on him, and said, Christ when he cometh, will he do more miracles than this *man* hath done ? 32 But the Pharisees heard that the multitude murmured concerning him : and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him. 33 Jesus therefore said, Yet a little while I am with you, and I go unto him that sent me. 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me : and where I am, ye cannot come. 35 The Jews therefore said among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him ? will he go unto the dispersion of the Greeks, and teach the Greeks ? 36 What saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall

not find me : and where I am, ye cannot come ? 37 In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood, and cried, saying, If any one thirst, let him come and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him, should receive : for the Holy Ghost was not yet come upon them, because that Jesus was not yet glorified. 40 Some of the multitude therefore when they heard his word, said, this is truly the prophet. 41 Others said, He is the Christ. Some said, does the Christ come out of Galilee ? 42 Does not the scripture say, that the Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was ? 43 So there was a division among the multitude because of him. 44 And some of them would have taken him ; but no one laid hands on him. 45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees ; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him ? 46 But the officers answered, Never man spake as this man. 47 The Pharisees answered them, Are ye also deceived ? 48 Does any one of the rulers or of the Pharisees believe on him ? 49 But this multitude who knoweth not the law, are cursed. 50 Nicodemus saith unto them, being one of them ; he that came to Jesus by night, at the first. 51 Doth our law judge a man before it will hear him, and know what he hath done ? 52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee ? Behold the scriptures : for out of Galilee hath arisen no prophet. 53 And every one went unto his own house.

VIII. Now Jesus went unto the mount of Olives : 1. And in the morning he cometh again into the temple,

## According to John.

temple, and all the people came to him. 3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought a woman taken in sin, and when they had set her in the midst. 4 The priests say unto him, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him, Master this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. 5 But Moses in the law commanded, to stone such women, But what sayst thou now? 6 But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 7 So when they continued asking, he lift up himself and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. 8 And again he stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 9 But every one of the Jews went out, beginning at the eldest, till all were gone out: and Jesus was left alone, the woman being in the midst. 10 When Jesus had lift up himself, he said to the woman, Where are those men? hath no one condemned thee? 11 And she said to him, No one Lord. But he said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee; go away, and from this time sin no more. 12 Jesus therefore spake again unto her, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. 13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true. 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of my self, my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, or whither I go. 15 Ye judge of the flesh; I judge no one. 16 And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and he that sent me. 17 It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. 18 I am one that bear witness of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me. 19 Therefore said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. 20 These words he spake in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no one seized on him, for his hour was not yet come. 21 Then said he again unto them, I go away and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go ye cannot come. 22 The Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go ye cannot come. 23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, but I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not me that I am he, ye shall die in your sins. 25 They therefore said unto him, Who art thou? Jesus therefore said unto them, Even as that I said unto you from the beginning. 26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I heard of him. 27 They understood not that he said God was his Father. 28 Jesus said unto them again, When ye shall have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he; and I do nothing of my self; but as the Father hath taught me, I speak these things. 29 And he that sent me, is with me: He hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him. 30 As he spake these words, many believed on him. 31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews who had believed on him, If ye will continue in my word, ye are my disciples indeed; 32 And ye shall know the truth and the truth shall make

## According to John.

make you free. 33 They answered him, and said, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any one: how sayst thou, Ye shall be made free? 34 Jesus answered them, Verily verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is a servant. 35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever. 36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. 37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. 38 What things I have seen with my Father, those I speak; and what things ye have seen with your father, those ye do. 39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus therefore said unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which he hath heard of God: this did not Abraham. 41 But ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We were not born of fornication; we have one Father, God. 42 Jesus therefore said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God; for I came not of my self, but he sent me. 43 Why do ye not understand my speech? because ye cannot hear my word. 44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer of men, from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. 45 Because I tell the truth, ye believe me not. 46 He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear them not. 47 The Jews answered and said unto him, Say we not

well, that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a demon? 49 Jesus answered, I have not a demon; but I honour my Father, and ye dishonour me. 50 But I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. 51 Verily verily I say unto you, whosoever observeth my saying, he shall never see death. 52 The Jews therefore said unto him, Now we have known that thou hast a demon. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayst, If a man observe my saying, he shall never taste of death. 53 Art thou greater than Abraham, who is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? 54 Jesus answered, If I shall honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God: 55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and observe his saying. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. 57 The Jews therefore said to him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 58 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham I am. 59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself and went out of the temple, and so passed by.

IX. And as he passed by, he saw a man who was blind from his birth, sitting. 2 And the disciples asked him, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? 3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. 4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no one can work. 5 As long as I am in the world, I

## According to Matthew:

and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. 26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that within the cup, that the outside of it may be clean also. 27 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres. The sepulchre appears beautiful outward, but is within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanness. 28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquity. 29 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, 30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. 31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them who have killed the prophets. 32 Ye have also filled up the measure of your fathers. 33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the judgment of Gehenna? 34 Therefore behold, I will send prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and *some* of them ye will kill and crucifie, and persecute from city to city: 35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the land, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye have slain between the temple and the altar. 36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation. 37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them who are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! 38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. 39 For I say unto you,

That ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed be he that cometh in the name of God.

XXIV. And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple, and his disciples came to him, to shew him the buildings of the temple. 2 And he answered and said unto them, See ye all these things? verily I say unto you, that there shall not be left here stone upon stone, that shall not be utterly thrown down. 3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the age? 4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man may deceive you. 5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and deceive many. 6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars; see that ye be not troubled: for it must come to pass, but the end is not yet. 7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and earthquakes in diverse places. 8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows. 9 Then shall they deliver you to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake. 10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. 11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. 12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many will wax cold. 13 But he that shall have endured unto the end, the same shall be saved: 14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached to all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come. 15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy

## According to John.

And who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? 37 Jesus answered, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that saileth with thee. 38 But he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. 39 And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world: that they who see not, might see; and that they who see, might be made blind. 40 But some of the Pharisees who were with him heard, and said unto him, Are we blind also? 41 Jesus therefore said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

X. Verily verily I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, he is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep. 3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 And when he putteth forth all his own, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow; but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. 6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them. 7 Jesus therefore said unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 8 Those that come before me, are thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not hear them. 9 I am the door: by me if any man shall enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in, and go out, and find pasture. 10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. But I come that they might have life. 11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. 12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd,

whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf seizeth and scattereth the sheep. 13 Because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. 14 I am the good shepherd, and know mine, and mine know me. 15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I give my life for the sheep. 16 But other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they will hear my voice; and they will be one fold, one shepherd. 17 Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again. 18 No man taketh it from me: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of the Father. 19 There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. 20 Many of them therefore said, He hath a demon, and is mad; why hear ye him? 21 Others said, These are not the words of a demoniac, Can a demon open the eyes of the blind? 22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication; It was rainy weather. 23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomons cloisters. 24 The Jews therefore came about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. 25 Jesus answered, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witness of me. 26 But ye believe not; because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. 27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. 28 And I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any one pluck them out of my hand. 29 My Father who gave them me, is greater than all: and none is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand. 30 I and the Father are one. 31 Then the

## According to John.

Jews took up stones to stone him. 32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from the Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? 33 The Jews answered him, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that being a man thou makest thyself God. 34 Jesus answered them and said, Is it not written in your law, that I said, Ye are gods? 35 If he called them gods? unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken: 36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, that Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? 37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 38 But if I do, though ye will not believe me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in the Father. 39 And they sought to take him: but he escaped out of their hand. 40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John was at first baptizing, and there he abode. 41 And many came unto him, and said, that John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of him were true. 42 And many believed him there.

XI. Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha. 2 It was Mary who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus also was sick. 3 Therefore his sisters sent unto Jesus, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest, is sick. 4 When Jesus heard that, he said, His sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. 5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 When he had heard therefore

that he was sick, Jesus abode two days still in the same place where he was. 7 Then after that he said to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again. 8 His disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews even now sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? 9 Jesus answered, Hath not the day twelve hours? If any one walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if any one walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him. 11 These things said he: and after that, he said unto them, Lazarus our friend sleepeth; but I go to awake him. 12 The disciples therefore said to him, Lord, if he sleep, he will recover. 13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking rest in sleep. 14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus our friend is dead. 15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there that ye may believe: But let us go unto him. 16 Thomas, therefore, who is called Didymus, said unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him. 17 Jesus therefore came to Bethany, and found that he had been in the grave four days. 18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem; fifteen furlongs off. 19 But many of Jerusalem came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. 20 Martha, therefore when she heard that Jesus was coming, met him: but Mary sat in the house. 21 Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 22 But even now I know, that whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee. 23 Jesus said unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. 24 Martha said unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection,



## According to John.

rection, at the last day. 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; 26 And whosoever liveth, and believeth on me, shall never die. Believest thou this? 27 She saith Yes, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ the Son of God who should come into the world. 28 And when she had so said, she went away, and called Mary her sister silently, saying, that The master is come, and calleth for thee. 29 When she heard, she arose quickly, and comes unto him. 30 But Jesus was not come in o the village, but was in that place where Martha met him. 31 The Jews therefore which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, supposing that she went to the grave, to weep there. 32 When therefore Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews who accompanied her weeping, he was troubled in spirit, as one in a passion. 34 And said, where have you laid him? They say unto him, Lord come and see. 35 And Jesus wept. 36 The Jews, therefore said, Behold how he loved him. 37 But some of them said, Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? 38 Jesus therefore again, as in a passion within himself cometh to the grave. Now it was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. 39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: He hath been there four days. 40

Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldst believe, thou shouldst see the glory of God? 41 They therefore took away the stone, and Jesus lift up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. 42 I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people who stand by, I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. 43 And when he had spoken this, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44 And he that was dead came forth presently, bound hand and foot with grave clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. 45 Many therefore of the Jews who came to Mary, and had seen what Jesus did, believed on him. 46 But some of them went to the Pharisees, and told them what Jesus had done. 47 Then the chief priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered a council together, and said, What do we? This man doth such miracles. 48 And if we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him; and the Romans will come and take away our place and nation. 49 But one of them, Caiphias, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, 50 Nor consider that it is expedient for you, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 51 But this spake he not of himself: but being the high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus was to die for that nation: 52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad. 53 From that day therefore they took counsel together that they might put him to death. 54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews;

## According to John

Jews; but went unto the country Samphurein, near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with the disciples. 55 Now the Jews passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country therefore up to Jerusalem, before the passover, to purifie themselves. 56 They fought therefore for Jesus also, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast? 57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should declare it, that they might seize him.

XII. Jesus, therefore six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was who had been dead, whom Jesus raised from the dead. 2 And they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. 3 Then Mary takes a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. 4 One of his disciples therefore Judas Scarioth who was to betray him, saith, 5. Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred denarii, and given to the poor? 6 But he said this, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and having the bag, he bare what was put therein. 7 Jesus therefore said, Let her alone; that she may keep it for the day of my burial. 9 But many therefore of the multitude of the Jews heard that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 But the chief priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death; 11 Be-

cause that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus. 12 On the next day many of the multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, 13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried aloud, saying, Hosanna, blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord, the King of Israel. 14 But Jesus when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written. 15 Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold thy King cometh, sitting on an asses colt. 16 These things his disciples minded not at the first: But when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and they had done these things unto him. 17 The multitude therefore that were with him bear record that he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead. 18 For this cause the multitude also met him, for that they heard that he had done this sign. 19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the whole world is gone after him. 20 But there were certain Greeks also among them, that came up to worship at the feast: 21 They came therefore to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. 22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: Again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. 23 And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. 24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat falling into the ground die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. 25 He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this

world,

## According to John:

world, shall keep it unto life eternal. 26 If any see me, let him follow me, and wheresoever I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will the Father honour. 27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. 28 Father, glorify thy name with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. And a voice came from heaven saying, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again. 29 The multitude therefore that stood heard *it*, and said that it was thunder: others said, that an Angel spake to him. 30 Jesus answered, and said, This voice came, not because of me, but for your sakes. 31 Now is the judgment of the world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all things unto me. 33 But he said this signifying what death he should die. 34 The multitude answered him, We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, that The Son of man must be lifted up? Who is therefore this Son of man? 35 Jesus therefore said unto them, Yet a little while is the light among you: walk therefore while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye have the light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them. 37 But though he had done so many miracles before them, they believed not on him: 38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom shall the arm of the Lord been revealed? 39 Therefore they could not believe, because Esaias said, 40 He hath blinded *them*, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. 41 But these things said Esaias, when he saw the glory of God there, and spake of him. 42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also, many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue. 43 For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. 44 Jesus therefore cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 45 He that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me, should not abide in darkness. 47 And if any one hear my words, and keep them not, I judge him not: for I came not that I might judge the world, but that I might save the world. 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. 49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father who sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is life eternal: what therefore I speak, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

XIII. Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. 2 And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Scarioth the Son of Simon that he should

## According to John.

should betray him. 3 He knowing that the Father had given him all things into *his* hands, and that he was come from God, and that he went to God. 4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside *his* garments, and took a towel, and girded himself. 5 After that, he taketh and poureth water into a bason, and began to wash his disciples feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded. 6 He cometh therefore to Simon Peter. He saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash *my* feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not yet; but thou shalt know hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Lord, Thou shalt never wash *my* feet. Jesus answered, If I shall not wash thee, thou hast no part with me. 9 Peter saith unto him, Lord, not the feet only, but also the hands and the head. 10 Jesus saith to him, he that is washed, needeth not to have his head washed, but his feet only, for he is clean all over, and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For Jesus knew who should betray him. 12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken *his* garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13 Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye say well; for I am. 14 If I then *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet, how much more should ye do it: 15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. 16 Verily, verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord, neither he that is sent, greater than he that sent him. 17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. 18 I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lifted up *his* heel against me. 19 Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*. 20 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. 21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily verily I say unto you, that one of you will betray me. 22 The disciples therefore looking one on another, doubted of whom he spake. 23 Now there was leaning on Jesus bosom, one of his disciples whom also Jesus loved. 24 Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, to ask who he should be of whom he spake. 25 He then lying on Jesus breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is he? 26 Jesus answereth him, and saith, He it is to whomsoever I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Scarioth *the son* of Simon. 27 And Satan entred into him. And Jesus saith unto him, What thou dost, do quickly. 28 But *no* one at the table knew why he spake this unto him. 29 For some thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor. 30 He therefore having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night. 31 When therefore he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him: 32 God shall also glorifie him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him. 33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, that Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you. 34 A new commandment I give

## According to John.

unto you, That ye love one another ; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 For by this shall all know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another. 36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou ? Jesus said to him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow afterwards. 37 He saith unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now ? I will lay down my life for thy sake. 38 Jesus answered, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake ? Verily, verily I say unto thee, that The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

XIV. And he said to his disciples, Let not your heart be troubled : Believe in God, believe also in me. 2 In my Fathers house are many mansions, But if not I would have told you ; for I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I shall go to prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto my self, that where I am, ye may be also. 4 And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know. 5 Thomas who was called Didymus, saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how do we know the way ? 6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life : no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. 7 If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also ; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. 8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you ; and yet hast thou not known me, Philip ? he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father ; and how sayst thou, Shew us the Father ? 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me ? the words

that I have spoken unto you, I spake not of my self : but the Father, that abideth in me, he doth his works. 11 Believe me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me : or else believe for the very works sake, 12 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, and greater than these shall he do ; because I go unto the Father. 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. 15 If ye love me, keep my commandments. 16 And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever ; 17 The Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him : but ye know him, for he abideth with you, and is in you. 18 I will not leave you orphans : I come to you. 19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more : but ye see me : because I live, ye shall live also. 20 In that day ye shall know, that I *am* in my Father, and you in me, and I in you. 21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me : and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father : and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him. 22 Judas saith unto him, not Scairioth, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world ? 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If any one love me, he will keep my words : and my Father will love him, and I will come unto him, and make my abode with him. 24 He that loveth me not, will not keep my sayings ; and the word which you hear, is not mine, but his who sent me. 25 These things

## According to John:

I have spoken unto you, being present with you. 26 But the Comforter, the Holy Ghost, whom my Father will send in my name, he will teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I shall say unto you. 27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. 28 Ye have heard that I said unto you, I go away, and come unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I go unto the Father: for the Father is greater than I. 29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it shall come to pass, ye might believe me. 30 Hereafter I will not talk many things to you: for the prince of the world cometh, and hath nothing to find in me. 31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as he commanded me, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

XV. I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away: and every one that beareth fruit, he will purge it, that it may bear more fruit. 4 As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: so neither can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 For I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, he bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye cannot do any thing. 6 If any one abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather it, and cast it into the fire, and it is burned. 7 But if ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit,

so be ye my disciples. 9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: abide ye in my love. 10 If ye shall keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love: even as I also have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love. 11 But these things have I spoken unto you, that my joy in you might remain, and your joy might be full. 12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends. 14 For ye are my friends, if ye shall do what I command you. 15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you. 16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and appointed you, that you should go and bring forth much fruit, and your fruit should remain; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17 These things I command you, Love one another. 18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me first. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: Because ye were not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the words that I said unto you, my servant is not greater than his Lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have observed my saying, they will observe yours also. 21 But these things will they do unto you for my names sake, because they know not him that sent me. 22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin.

## According to John.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which no one else had done, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen me, and hated me and my Father. 25 But that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, that They hated me without a cause. 26 But when the Comforter shall come, whom I will send unto you from my Father, the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from my Father, he will testify of me. 27 And hear ye witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

XVI. These things have I spoken that ye should not be offended. 2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: But the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth God service. 3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. 4 These things have I told you, that when the hour shall come, ye may remember them that I told you. And these things I said not unto you from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. 7 But I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. 8 And when he is come, he will convict the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement; 9 Of sin indeed, because they believe not on me; 10 And of righteousness, because I go to the Father, and ye see me no more; 11 And of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged. 12 I have yet many

things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 When he, the Spirit of truth shall come, he will guide you in all truth; for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, he will speak: and he will tell you things to come. 14 He will glorify me: for he shall receive of mine and will shew it unto you. 15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he taketh of mine, and shall tell it unto you. 16 A little while and ye shall see me no longer: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, *Because I go to the Father.* 17 Some of his disciples therefore said among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while and ye shall see me no longer: and again, a little while and ye shall see me: and, *Because I go to the Father?* 18 What is this? A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. 19 Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him about this Matter, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among your selves about what I said, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me? 20 Verily verily I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament; The world shall rejoyce: Ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. 21 A woman when she is in travail, hath sorrow, because her day is come: but as soon as she has brought forth the child, she remembereth no more the sorrow, for joy that a man is born into the world. 22 And ye now therefore shall have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart will rejoyce, and your joy no one taketh from you. 23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: Verily verily I say unto you, If ye shall ask the Father any thing in my name,

## According to John.

name, he will give *it* you. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name : ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. 25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs, The hour cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall tell you plainly of the Father. 26 In that day ye shall ask in my name : and I say not unto you, that I will ask my Father concerning you : 27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from the Father. 28 I came forth from the Father, and am come unto the world : again, I leave the world, and go to the Father. 29 His disciples say unto him, lo, now thou speakest plainly, and speakest no proverb. 30 Now we know that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any one should ask thee : by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 31 He answered them, Do ye now believe ? 32 Behold the hour cometh, yea, is come, that ye shall be scattered, every one to his own, and shall leave me alone : and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation ; but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

XVII. These words spake Jesus ; and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come ; glorifie thy Son, that thy Son may glorifie thee. 2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that every one whom thou hast given him may have eternal life. 3 And this is life eternal, that they may know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent into this world. 4 I have glorified thee on the earth : And I have finished

the work which thou gavest me to do. 5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had from thee before the world was. 6 I have manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me out of the world ; thine they were, and thou hast given them me ; and they have kept thy word. 7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are from thee. 8 For I have given unto them thy words which thou hast given me ; and they have received them truly, because I came out from thee ; and they have believed that thou didst send me. 9 I ask for them : I ask not for the world ; but for them whom thou hast given me, for they are thine. 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and thou hast glorified me in them. 11 And I am no longer in this world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. I am no longer in the world, and I am in the world : Holy Father, keep them in thy name. 12 What thou gavest me, that they may be one as we are. While I was with them, I kept them in thy name. Those that thou gavest me I have kept : And none of them is lost, but the son of perdition ; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in this world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. 14 But I have given them thy word ; and the world hateth them, because they are not of this world. 15 I ask not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil one. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctifie them in the truth : thy word is truth. 18 As thou hast sent me unto this world, even so have I also sent them unto this



## According to John:

this world. 19 And for their sakes I am *he*. And Judas also who betrayed him, stood with them. 6 I sanctifie my self, that they also may be sanctified in the truth. 20 When therefore he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went away backward, and fell to the ground. 7 Again therefore he asked them saying, Whom seek ye? but they said again, Jesus of Nazareth. 8 Jesus answered them, I have told you that I am *he*. If therefore ye seek me, let these go away. 9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, that whom thou gavest me, of them I have lost none. 10 Simon Peter therefore having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right ear. That servants name was Malchus. 11 Jesus therefore said unto Peter, Put up the sword into the sheath: the cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it? 12 The band therefore and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him. 13 And led *him* to Annas first for he was father in law to Caiphas, who was the high priest that same year. 14 Now Caiphas was he also who gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should perish for the people. 15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and the other disciple. But that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. 16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple who was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. 17 The damsel therefore that kept the door saith unto Peter, Art not thou also *one* of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not. 18 And the servants and officers stood *there*, who had made a fire of coals, for it was cold, and they warmed themselves: But Peter stood with them, and warmed himself. 19

XVIII. When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. 2 And Judas also who betrayed him, knew the place; for Jesus often resorted thither with his disciples. 3 Judas therefore having received a band and officers from the chief priests and from the Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons. 4 But Jesus knowing all things that were coming upon him, went forth, and saith unto them, Whom seek ye? 5 They answered him and said, Jesus of Nazareth. He saith unto them,

that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. 16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple who was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. 17 The damsel therefore that kept the door saith unto Peter, Art not thou also *one* of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not. 18 And the servants and officers stood *there*, who had made a fire of coals, for it was cold, and they warmed themselves: But Peter stood with them, and warmed himself. 19

The

## According to John.

The high priest therefore asked Jesus about his disciples, and about his doctrine. 20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I always taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort, and in secret have I said nothing. 21 Why askest thou me? ask the hearers what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said. 22 And when he had spoken these things, one of the officers who stood by, struck Jesus, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so? 23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me? 24 And Annas sent him bound unto Caiphas the high priest. 25 But Simon Peter was standing and warming himself: They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not. 26 One of the servants of the high priest, being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27 Peter therefore again denied, and immediately the cock crew. 28 They led therefore Jesus from Caiphas, unto the hall of judgment: and it was early, and they themselves went not into the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled: but might eat the passover. 29 Pilate therefore went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man? 30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee. 31 Pilate therefore said unto them, Take ye him and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any one to death: 32 That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die. 33 Pilate therefore

entered into the judgment-hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews? 34 And Jesus answered, Sayst thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me? 35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: What hast thou done? 36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now my kingdom is not from hence. 37. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou therefore a king? Jesus answered, Thou sayst that I am a king. For this was I born, and for this came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, beareth my voice. 38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews; and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all. 39 But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the king of the Jews? 40 Again therefore they cried out, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

XIX. Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him. 2 And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe, 3 And said, Hail king of the Jews: and they struck him. 4 Pilate went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him. 5 Jesus therefore came forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And he saith unto them, Behold;

## According to John.

Behold, the man. 6. When the chief priests therefore and the officers saw him, they cried out saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I find no fault in him. 7. The Jews answered him, We have a law, and according to law he ought to die, because he hath made himself the Son of God. 8. When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; 9. And they went again into the judgment-hall, and he saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave no answer. 10. Pilate therefore saith unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee; and have power to release thee? 11. Jesus answered him, Thou hast no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin. 12. From thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out saying, If thou shalt let this man go, thou art not Cæsars friend. For whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar. 13. When Pilate therefore heard these words, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down upon the judgment-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14. And it was the preparation of the passover, but about the third hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your king. 15. But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cæsar. 16. Then therefore he delivered him unto them to be crucified. But they therefore took Jesus and led him away. 17. And he bearing his cross, went forth into what is called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha: 18. Where they crucified him, and two others with him, on either side one, but Jesus in the midst. 19. And Pilate wrote a title and put on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS. 20. This title therefore read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, in Greek, in Latin. 21. The chief priests of the Jews said therefore to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews: but that he said, I am king of the Jews. 22. Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written. 23. The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments and made four parts, to every soldier a part, and also the coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. 24. But they said among themselves, Let us not rent it; but cast lots for it, whose it is, that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my garments among them, and for my vesture they did cast a lot. These things therefore the soldiers did. 25. Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the daughter of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. 26. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold, thy son. 27. Then saith he to the disciple, Behold, thy mother. And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home. 28. After this, Jesus knowing that all things were already accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. 29. There was therefore set a vessel full of vinegar.

## According to John,

vinegar : and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth. 30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished : and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost. 31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath, because it was the preparation, for that was the great Sabbath day, besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and they might be taken away. 32. The soldiers therefore came and brake the legs of the first, and of the other who was crucified with him. 33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs. 34 But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. 35 And he that saw it, bear record, and his record is true : and he knoweth that he saith true : that ye also might believe. 36. For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, Ye shall not break a bone of him. 37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced. 38 But after these things, Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus : and Pilate gave him leave : And he came and took the body of Jesus. 39 But there came also Nicodemus, who at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh, and aloes, about an hundred linte. 40 They therefore took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. 41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden

and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid; 42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation; for the sepulchre was nigh.

XX. Now the first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, while it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre; 2 She runneth therefore and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. 3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. 4 Now they ran both together : and the other disciple out-ran Peter, and came first to the sepulchre; 5 And he stooping down, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. 6 Simon Peter therefore came also following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lying; 7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in one place by it self. 8 Then went in therefore that other disciple who came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and believed not. 9. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. 10 the disciples therefore went away again unto their own homes. 11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping : As therefore she wept, she stooped down unto the sepulchre, 12 And seeth two angels, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain : 13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? whom seekest thou ? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord; and I know not where they have laid him. 14

When

## According to John.

When she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it is Jesus. 15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? she supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast taken him away, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. But she turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Lord, Master. 17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I have not yet ascended to the Father: Go therefore to the brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God. 18 Mary Magdalene cometh and telleth his disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and declared to them what he had said to her. 19 The same day therefore at evening, being the first day of the week, and when the doors were shut, where the disciples were for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. 20 And when he had so said, he shewed his hands and his side to them. His disciples therefore were glad when they saw the Lord. 21 He therefore said to them again, Peace be unto you: as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. 22 When he said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost. 23 Whose soever sins ye shall remit, they are remitted unto them; whose soever ye shall retain, they are retained. 24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, that we have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails,

put my hands into his Side, and put my finger into the print of the nails, I will not believe. 26 And after eight days, again the disciples were within, and Thomas with them: Then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. 27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and put unto my side; and be not faithless, but believing. 28 Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord, and my God. 29 Jesus saith unto him, Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and have believed. 30 Moreover many other signs did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. 31 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and that believing ye might have eternal life in his name.

XXI. After these things, He shewed himself again to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias; But thus shewed he himself: 2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael, who was of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter saith unto these, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship: and that night they caught nothing. 4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: However the disciples knew not that it is Jesus. 5 Jesus therefore saith unto them, Children, have ye any food? They answered him, No. 6 But he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. And they cast, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of

## According to John.

of fishes. 7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is your Lord. When Simon Peter therefore heard that it is the Lord, he girt *his* upper garment about him, for he was naked, and leaped into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came in a little ship, for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits, dragging the net with fishes. 9 When therefore they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals lying there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. 10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fishes which ye have now caught. 11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three; and altho' there were so many, yet was not the net broken. 12 Jesus saith unto them, Come, dine. But none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it is the Lord. 13 Jesus cometh and taketh bread, and giving thanks he gave it to them, and fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Jesus stewed himself to his disciples, since he was risen from the dead. 15 When therefore they had dined, Jesus said to Simon Peter, Simon *son of John*, lovest thou me more than these? \* Jesus saith unto him, Yes, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. 16 The Lord saith to him the second time, Simon *son of John*, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yes, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. 17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon

*son of John*, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Lord, thou knowest all men; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. 18 Verily verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest; but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and others shall gird thee, and carry thee away whither thou wouldest not. 19 But these things spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken these things, he saith unto him, Follow me. 20 But Peter turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; who also leaned on his breast at supper, and said unto him, Lord, who is he that betrayeth thee? 21 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he remain thus until I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me. 22 This saying therefore went out unto the brethren, and they supposed that that disciple should not die. And Jesus said not, that Thou shalt not die: but If I will that he tarry till I come, *what is that to thee?* 23 This is the disciple who testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true. 24 But there are also many other things which Christ Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written,

*The Gospel according to John is finished:*

*The Gospel according to LUKE begins,*

The Gospel according to LUKE.

CHAP. I

**F**Orasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things of which we have the fullest evidence.

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, who from the beginning were eye witnesses, and ministers of the word: 3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, 4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been catechised.

5 **T**HERE was in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest name Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife ~~was~~ of the daughters of Aaron, and her name ~~was~~ Elisabeth. 6 Now they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless. 7 And they had no child, because Elisabeth was barren; and both were advanced in their days. 8 Now it came to pass, that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course, 9 According to the custom of the priests office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of God: 10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the hour of incense. 11 But there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and

fear fell upon him. 13 And the angel said unto him, Fear not Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear a son, and thou shalt call his name John. 14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. 15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mothers womb. 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. 17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife advanced in her days. 19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. 20 And behold, thou shalt be silent, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed; because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. 21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. 22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckned unto them, and remained

## According to Luke.

speechless 23 And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he then departed to his own house. 24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid her self five months, saying, 25 That thus hath the Lord done to me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men. 26 And in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a city of Galilee, whose name was Nazaret, 27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary. 28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. 29 And she was troubled at the saying, and considered in her self what sort of salutation this should be. 30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. 31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of David his father. 33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. 34 And Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God. 36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is her sixth month who was called barren. 37 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the servant of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her. 39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-country with haste, into a city of Juda, 40 And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. 41 And it came to pass, that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, and Elisabeth's babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. 42 And she cried out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. 43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? 44 For lo, when the voice of thy salutation came to mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. 45 And blessed is she that hath believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord. 46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord, 47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. 48 For the Lord hath regarded the low estate of his servant, for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. 49 For God that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy is his name. 50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to generation. 51 He hath shewed strength with his arm, he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. 52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. 53 He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent away empty. 54 He hath helped his servant Israel, to remember his mercy, 55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for ever. 56 And Mary abode with



## According to Luke.

with her three months, and returned to her own house. 57 Now Elisabeth's full time came, that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. 58 And her neighbours and her kinsfolks heard how the Lord had magnified his mercy to her; and they rejoiced with her. 59 And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him, after the name of his father, Zacharias. 60 And his mother answered and said, No, but his name shall be called John. 61 And they said unto her, That there is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. 62 And they made signs to his father, what he would have him called. 63 And he asked for a writing-table, and wrote, His name is John. And his tongue was loosed: And they marvelled all. 64 And his mouth was opened, and he spake, praising God. 65 And great fear came on all that dwelt round about him: and all these sayings were publickly talked of abroad throughout all the hill-country of Judea. 66 And all they that heard it laid it up in their hearts, saying, What then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord ~~was~~ also with him. 67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, 68 Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people, 69 And hath raised an horn of salvation for us, in the house of David his servant; 70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, who have been since the world began; 71 Salvation from the hand of our enemies, and of all that hate us. 72 To perform the mercy to our fathers, to remember his holy covenant: 73 The oath which he swore to our father Abraham, 74 To grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear, 75 In holiness and righteousness before him, all our days. 76 But thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his ways; 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, in the remission of their sins. 78 Through the bowels of the mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, 79 To enlighten them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace. 80 Now the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing into Israel.

II. Now it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be enrolled. 2 † This first enrolment was made when Cyrenius was president of Syria. 3 And all went to be enrolled, every one into his country. 4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into the land of Juda, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehchem: 5 To be enrolled

---

† Read the text thus, from the known history in Josephus and Tertullian. This first enrolment was made when Saturninus, but the second when Cyrenius was president of Syria.

## According to Luke.

rolled with Mary who was espoused to him; being great with child; because he was of the house and family of David. But when they were come thither the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. 7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn. 8 But there were in this country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping the night watches over their flocks. 9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and a glory shone round about them; and they were sore afraid. 10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, and it shall be to all people. 11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, who is Christ the Lord. 12 And let this be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, in a manger. 13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the host of Heaven, praising God, and saying, 14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, among men of good will. 15 And it came to pass, as the angel went away from them into heaven, the men who were shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. 16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph; and the babe lying in a manger. 17 And when they had seen him, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning the child. 18 And all they that heard, wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. 19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart. 20

And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them. 21 And when eight days were accomplished which were for the circumcising of the child, his name was named JESUS, which was so called of the angel before he was conceived in his mothers womb. 22 And when the days of the purification it self, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, 23 As it is written in the law of the Lord, that Every male which openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord. 24 And to offer a sacrifice, according to what is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons. 25 And there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Symeon; and this man was just and devout, expecting the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. 26 And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death before he should see the Lords Christ. 27 And he came in the spirit unto the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him, after the custom of the law, 28 Then he took him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, 29 Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word. 30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation: 31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people: 32 A light for a revelation to the Gentiles and the glory of thy people Israel. 33 And his father and mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. 34 And Symeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and for the rising

## According to Luke.

rising again of many in Israel ; and for a sign which shall be contradicted. 35 But a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also ; that the reasonings of many hearts may be revealed. 36 And Anna a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser ; was advanced in many days, having lived with an husband seven years from her virginity : 37 And she ~~was~~ a widow of eighty and four years old : who departed not from the temple, serving with fastings and prayers night and day. 38 And coming in the same hour she gave thanks unto God, and spake of him to all them that expected redemption in Jerusalem. 39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned unto Galilee, unto their own city Nazareth : as it was spoken by the prophet, He shall be called a Nazarene. 40 And the child grew, and waxed strong, filled with wisdom : and the grace of God was in him. 41 But his parents also went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. 42 And when he was twelve years old, his parents went up, having him *with them*, after the custom of the feast of unleavened bread : 43 And when they had finished the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem ; and his parents knew *is* not. 44 And supposing him to have been in the company, they went a days journey ; and sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance. 45 And when they found *him* not, they returned to Jerusalem, seeking him. 46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, hearing them, and asking them questions. 47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. 48 And when they saw him, they were amazed : and his mother said unto him, Son why hast thou done thus to us ? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing, and troubled. 49 Jesus said unto them, How is it that ye sought me ? knew ye not that I must be in my Fathers house ? 50 But they understood not the saying which he spake unto them. 51 And he went down with them, to Nazareth, and was subject unto them : And his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. 52 And Jesus increased in wisdom, and stature, and in favour with God, and with men.

III. Now in the fiftieth year of of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being procurator of Judea, and Herod *being tetrarch of Galilee*. and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lyfania, the tetrarch of Abilene, 2 Under the high priest Annas ; and Caiphas ; the word of God was unto John, the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. 3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins ; 4 As it is written in the book of the words of Ezeias the prophet, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make your paths straight. 5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low ; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth ; 6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of the Lord. 7 But he said to the multitude that came forth to be baptized before him, ye brood of vipers, who have shewed you to flee from the wrath to come ? 8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of repentance, and

## According to Luke:

and begin not to say within your  
selves, We have Abraham for our  
father: for I say unto you, that  
God is able of these stones to raise  
children unto Abraham. 9 But  
the ax is already laid unto the root  
of the trees: every tree therefore  
which bringeth not forth good  
fruits, is hewn down, and cast  
into the fire. 10 And the multi-  
tudes asked him, saying, What  
therefore shall we do, that we may  
be saved? 11 He answereth and  
saith unto them, He that hath two  
coats, let him impart to him that  
hath none; and he that hath meat,  
let him do likewise. 12 But the  
publicans came in like manner to  
be baptized, and said unto him,  
Master, what shall we do, that we  
may be saved? 13 But he said  
unto them, Exact no more than  
what is appointed you to exact.  
14 And the soldiers also demand-  
ed saying, What shall we do that  
we may be saved? But he said  
unto them, Do violence to no man,  
neither accuse falsely, and be content  
with your allowances. 15 And  
as the people were in expectation,  
and all mused in their hearts of  
John, whether he were not the

Christ, 16 He knowing their  
thoughts said, I baptize you unto  
repentance in water; but he that  
cometh is mightier than I, the  
latchet of his shoe I am not  
worthy to unloose: he shall bap-  
tize you in the Holy Ghost and  
fire. 17 Whose fan is in his hand,  
and he will thoroughly purge the  
floor, and will indeed gather the  
wheat into the garner; but the  
chaff he will burn with fire un-  
quenched. 18 Many other things  
indeed therefore in his admonition  
preached he also unto the people.  
19 But Herod the tetrarch, being  
reproved by him for Herodias his  
brothers wife, and for all the evils  
which Herod had done, 20 Ad-  
ded also this above all, that he  
shut up John in prison. 21 Now  
it came to pass when all the people  
were baptized, and when Jesus also  
was baptized, and praying, the  
heaven was opened: 22 And the  
Holy Ghost descended in a bodily  
appearance like a dove unto him, and  
a voice came from heaven, Thou art  
my Son, This day have I begotten  
thee. 23 But Jesus was about  
thirty years of age, when he be-  
gan, He was supposed to be the son

Of Joseph,  
Of Jacob,  
Of Marthan,  
Of Eleazar,  
Of Eliud,  
Of Jachin,  
Of Sadoc,  
Of Azor,  
Of Eliakim,  
Of Abiud,  
Of Zorobabel,  
Of Salathiel,  
Of Jechonias,  
Of Joakim,  
[Of Eliakim]  
Of Josias,  
Of Amos,  
Of Manasse,  
Of Ezekias,  
Of Ahas,  
Of Joachan,  
Of Ozias,  
Of Ananias,  
Of Josias,

K

[From Irmenant:]

Of Mary.  
Of Heli.  
Of Melchi.  
Of Janna.  
Of Joseph.  
Of Matathias:  
Of Amos.  
Of Naum.  
Of Essi.  
Of Naggi.  
Of Miasa.  
Of Matathias:  
Of Semet.  
Of Joseph.  
Of Juab:  
Of Joannas:  
Of Rhesa.  
Of Zorobabel.  
Of Salathiel.  
Of Neri.  
Of Melchi.  
Of Adai.  
Of Coiam.

Of

## According to Luke.

Of Ochozias,	Of Elmodam.
Of Joram,	Of Er.
Of Josaphad,	Of Joses.
Of Aſaph,	Of Eliezer.
Of Abiud,	Of Jorim.
Of Robeam,	Of Matthat.
Of Solomon,	Of Levi.
Of David,	Of Symeon.
Of Jeſſai,	Of Judas.
Of Obed,	Of Joſeph.
Of Boos,	Of Jonan.
Of Salmon,	Of Eliakim.
Of Naſſon,	Of Melea.
Of Aminadab,	Of Mainan.
Of Aram,	Of Mattatha.
Of Aſrom,	Of Nathan.
Of Phares,	Of David.
Of Judas,	Of Jeſſai.
Of Jacob,	Of Obed.
Of Iſaac.	Of Booz.
Of Abraham,	Of Salmon.
Of Thara,	Of Naſſon.
Of Nachor,	Of Aminadab,
Of Seruc.	Of Aran.
Of Ragau,	Of Eſrom.
Of Phalec,	Of Phares.
Of Eber,	Of Judas.
Of Sala,	Of Jacob.
Of Arphaxad,	Of Iſaac.
Of Sem.	Of Abraham.
Of Noe,	Of Thara.
Of Lamec,	Of Nachor.
Of Marhuſala,	Of Saruch.
Of Ainoch,	Of Ragau.
Of Jared,	Of Phalec.
Of Maleleel,	Of Eber.
Of Cainan,	Of Sala.
Of Ainan,	Of Arphaxad.
Of Seth,	Of Sem.
Of Adam,	Of Noe.
Of God,	Of Lamech.
	Of Marhuſala.
	Of Enoch.
	Of Jared.
	Of Maleleel.
	Of Cainan.
	Of Enos.
	Of Seth.
	Of Adam. — Eve.
	Of God.

IV. And Jeſus being full of the Holy Ghoſt, returned from Jordan, and was led by the ſpirit into the wilderneſs, a Being forty days tempted of Satan; and in thoſe days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he hungred. 3 But the devil ſaid unto him, If thou

## According to Luke:

thou be the Son of God, speak, preach the gospel to the poor, that these stones may be made to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, 19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. 20 And having closed the book, he gave it again to the minister; and sat down; and the eyes of all that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 But he began to say unto them, that This day this scripture is fulfilled in your ears. 22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? 23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capharnaum do also here in thy country. 24 And he said, Verily, verily I say unto you, that No prophet is accepted in his own country. 25 I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up for three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land: 26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta of Sidonia, unto a widow woman. 27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman, the Syrian. 28 But all they in the synagogue, when they had heard these things, were filled with wrath, 29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. 30 But he passing through the midst of them, went away: 31 And came down to Capharnaum a city near the sea, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim, and taught them on the sabbaths, 32 And they were all astonished at his doctrine: for his

## According to Luke.

word was with power. 33 But in the synagogue there was a man who had an unclean dæmon, and cried out with a loud voice, 34 Saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us here? I know thee who thou art; the holy One of God. 35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the dæmon had thrown him in the midst and cried out, he came out of him, and did him no hurt. 36 And they were all greatly amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out. 37 And the rumor concerning him, went out into every place of the country round about. 38 And he arose out of the synagogue, and came into Simon and Andrews house: and Simon's wives mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her. 39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her immediately, in so much that she arose and ministered unto them. 40 Now when the sun was set, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one, and healed them. 41 But dæmons also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ. 42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. 43 But he said unto them, that I must preach the kingdom of God in other cities also: for therefore am I sent. 44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

V. And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he was standing by the lake of Gennefaret, 2 And saw two ships standing by the lake; but the fishermen were gone out of them, and washed *their* nets. 3 And he entred into one ship which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thrust out a very little from the land: and he sat down and taught the multitude in the ship. 4 But when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. 5 But Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will not disobey. 6 And when they had presently let down their nets, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes; inso-much that their nets brake. 7 And they beckned unto *their* partners, in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they almost sunk. 8 But when Simon saw *it*, he fell down to his feet saying, I beseech thee Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord. 9 For he was astonished, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: 10 But his partners were James and John the sons of Zebedee. But he said unto them, come and be not fishers of fish, for I will make you fishers of men. 11 But when they had heard *this* they left all upon the land, and followed him. 12 And it came to pass, when he was in one of the cities, behold, a leprous man: who seeing Jesus, fell on *his* face, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 13 But he put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying, I will; Be thou clean. And immediately he was cleansed. 14 And he charged him to tell no one: but go away, and shew thyself

## According to Luke.

tell to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, that it may be a testimony unto you. But he went out; and began to proclaim and spread the fame of the matter; in so much that he could not openly enter into the city; but he was without in desert places; and they came together unto him. And he came again to Capharnaum. 15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities. 16 And he withdrew himself into the desert places and prayed. 17 And it came to pass on one of the days, as he was teaching, the Pharisees and teachers of the law came together, now they were come together out of every village of Galilee, and Judea, to be healed. 18 And behold, men brought in a bed a man who was a paralytick: and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19 And when they did not find what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, and taking away the tiles where he was, they let down the couch, with the paralytick, into the midst before Jesus. 20 And when Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the paralytick, Man, thy sins are forgiven. 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying in their hearts, what does this man speak, blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone? 22 But Jesus knowing their reasonings, he answered and said unto them, Why reason ye wicked things in your hearts? 23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins are forgiven, or to say, Rise and walk? 24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, he said unto the paralytick I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thine house. 25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up his bed, and departed to his house, glorifying God. 26 And they were filled with dread, saying, We have seen strange things to-day. 27 And coming again to the sea, he taught the multitude that followed him; and passing by he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus, at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. 28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him. 29 And Levi made him a great treat in his own house: and there was a great company of publicans, and of others that sat down. 30 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured to his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners. 31 But Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are well need not a physician: but they that are sick. 32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. 33 But they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and the disciples of the Pharisees; but thy disciples do none of these things. 34 But Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, so long as they have the bridegroom with them? 35 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, then shall they fast, in those days. 36 But he spake also a parable unto them, No man renteth a piece from a new garment and putteth it upon an old one: if otherwise, then both the new will make a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, will not agree with the old. 37 And no one putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the old bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles will perish. 38 But they put new wine into new bottles; and they are preserved.

VI. And



## According to Luke.

VI. And it came to pass on the first sabbath after the second day of the passover, that he went through the corn-fields: But his disciples began to pluck the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing with *their* hands. 2 But certain of the Pharisees said unto him, see what thy disciples do on the sabbath, which is not lawful. 3 But Jesus answering said unto them, Have ye never read this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and those with him: 4 How he went into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests alone? 5 On the same day seeing one working on the sabbath, he said unto him, Man, If thou knowest what thou doest, thou art blessed: But if thou dost not know thou art cursed, and art a transgressor of the law. 6 And when he entered again into the synagogue on the sabbath, there was a man who had a withered hand, 7 The scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal, that they might find to accuse him. 8 But he knowing their thoughts, said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand in the midst. And he arose, and stood up. 9 But Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it? But they held their peace. 10 And looking round about upon them all, in anger, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and his hand was restored whole as the other also. And he said unto them, that the son of man is Lord also of the sabbath. 11 And they were filled with madness; and reasoned one with another, how they might destroy him. 12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in an Oratory of God. 13 And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: and of them he chose twelve, whom also he called Apostles; 14 First Simon whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James, and John his brother; whom he also named Boanerges, which is sons of Thunder: And Philip, and Bartholomew, 15 And Matthew, and Thomas, who was also called Didymus; and James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes, 16 And Judas the son of James, and Judas Scarioth, who also was the traitor. 17 And he came down with them and stood in a plain place, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and other cities, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, who came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; 18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits were healed. 19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed all. 20 And he again lifted up his eyes upon the disciples, and said, Blessed are ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. 21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. 22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. 23 Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: because your reward is great in heaven: In the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. 24 But wo unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation. 25 Wo unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now

## According to Luke.

now for ye shall mourn and weep, 26 Wo unto you when all men shall speak well to you: In like manner did their fathers to the false prophets. 27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you: 28 Bless them that curse you, pray for them which despitefully use you. 29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also to him the other: and from him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not thy coat also. 30 Give to every one that asketh thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, require *them* not again. 31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them. 32 For if ye love them who love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do this. 33 And if ye do good to them who do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do the same. 34 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive again. 35 But love ye your enemies, and do good; and lend, depending nothing: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful, and the evil. 36 Be ye merciful, as your Father also is merciful. 37 Judge not, that ye may not be judged: condemn not, that ye may not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: 38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running over, shall they give into your bosom. For with what measure ye measure shall be measured to you again. 39 But he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind; shall they not both fall into the ditch? 40 The disciple is not above the

master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master. 41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine eye? 42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye; and behold a beam is in thine eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote out of thy brothers eye. 43 A good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruits: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruits. 44 Every tree is known by its own fruit: for of thorns figs are not gathered, nor of a bramble gather they grapes. 45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth good: An evil man bringeth forth evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh, 46 And why say ye to me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? 47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: 48 He is like a man who built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation upon a rock: but when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. 49 But he that heareth and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the ground, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

VII. And it came to pass when he had ended speaking these words, he came unto Capharnaum. 2 And a certain centurions servant, who was honored by him, was sick and ready to die. 3 But when he heard of Jesus, he sent the elders

## According to Luke.

of the Jews, asking him that he would come and heal his servant. 4 And when they came, they besought him earnestly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this. 5 For he loveth our nation, and hath built us a synagogue. 6 But Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof. 7 But say in a word, and my servant shall be healed. 8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it. 9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed, verily I say unto you, I have never found so great faith in Israel. 10 And the servants that were sent, returning to the house, found him recovered that had been sick. 11 And the day after, he went into a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 But it came to pass when he was come nigh to the gate of the city, there was one dead carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city followed along with her. 13 And when Jesus saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. 14 And he came and touched the bier, but the bearers stood still; and he said, Young man, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak: and he gave him to his mother. 16 And a fear seized on them all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet hath risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people. 17 And this rumor of him went forth in Judea, and in all the region round about. 18 Among whom also, it came unto John the Baptist. 19 Who also calling unto him two of his disciples, saith, Go and say unto him, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another? 20 And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another? 21 And in that same hour he cured many of infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and he made the blind to see. 22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go and tell John what things your eyes have seen, and your ears have heard; that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised, the poor have the gospel preached to them. 23 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be scandalized at me. 24 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? 25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they who are gloriously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts. 26 But what went ye out to see? A prophet? Yes, I say unto you, and more than a prophet, For there was no greater prophet of those that were born of women than John the Baptist. 27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way. 28 But I say unto you, He that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater than he. 29 And all the people that heard this, and the publicans

## According to Luke.

publicans justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. 30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God, being not baptized of him, 31 Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? 32 They are like unto children sitting in the market, and calling to one another, saying, We have piped, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. 33 For John the Baptist came neither eating, nor drinking; and ye say, He hath a demon. 34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. 35 But wisdom is justified of her children. 36 But one of the Pharisees asked him, that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house and sat down, 37 And behold, a woman in the city, a sinner, when she knew that he was sat down in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, 38 And stood behind him, at his feet weeping, and washed his feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. 39 Now when the Pharisee who had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This *man*, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner. 40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he said, Master, say on. 41 But he said, There was a certain creditor, who had two debtors: the one owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. 42 When *they* had nothing to pay, he forgave both. Which of *them* therefore will love *him* most? 43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. 44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, and thou gavest me no water for my feet: but *she* hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with her hairs. 45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. 46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed *it* with ointment. 47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Many things are forgiven her. 48 But he said unto her, All thy sins are forgiven. 49 And they that sat down with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? 50 And he said to the woman, woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

VIII. And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God. and the twelve *were* with him; 2 And certain women who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom had gone seven demons. 3 And Joanna, the wife of Cbuzas, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others, who also ministered unto them of their substance. 4 And when a great multitude were come together, and of those that went to him to the city, he spake this parable to them. 5 A sower went out to sow seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and it was trodden down, and the fowls devoured it. 6 And other fell upon a rock, and when it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. 7 And some fell in the midst of

## According to Luke.

thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it, 8 And other fell on honest and good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred-fold. And when he said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. 9 And his disciples asked him, What may this parable? 10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables be; that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand. 11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. 12 Those by the way-side, are they that follow: [then] cometh the devil, and taketh the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. 13 They on the rock, when they hear, receive the word with joy; these have no root, who for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away. 14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, who when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares, riches, and pleasures of life, and bring no perfect fruit. 15 But that on the good ground, are they, who in a good heart, having heard the word of God, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience. 16 Now No one when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they who enter in may see the light. 17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be manifest: neither any thing hid, but that it shall be known, and become manifest. 18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have. 19 Now there came to him his mother, and his brethren, and could not come at him for the multitude. 20 But it was told him, that Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking thee, 21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it. 22 But it came to pass on one of the days that he went up into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they lunched forth. 23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a great storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy. 24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, Lord, we perish. Then he rose, and rebuked the wind, and the waves of water: and they ceased, and there was a calm. 25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, saying one to another, What a man is this? for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him. 26 But they arrived at the country of the Gerarsens which is over against Galilee. 27 And they went forth to land. And a man met him out of the city, who had demons a long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in an house, but in the tombs. 28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Thou Son of the most high? I beseech thee torment me not. 29 For he spake to the unclean spirit, Come out of the man. For many times it had caught him: for he was kept bound with chains, and fetters: and he brake the bands, for he was driven of the demon into the wilderness. 30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said my name is Legion: for there were many demons. 31 And They besought him

## According to Luke.

him that he would not command them to go out into the abys. 32 And there was there an herd of swine feeding on the mountain; But They besought him that they might enter into the swine; And he suffered them. 33 Then went the dæmons out of the man, and entred into the swine; but the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. 34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and told *it* in the city, and in the country. 35 But when they went out of the city and saw what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the dæmoniack, sitting at the feet of Jesus, in his right mind and clothed; they were afraid. 36 For They which saw *it*, told them by what means he that was possessed of the dæmons, was healed. 37 But they all, the country of Gerasens also asked Jesus to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: But he went *into the ship*, and returned back again. 38 Now the man out of whom the dæmons were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but he sent him away, saying, 39 Go to thine own house, shewing how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went away, and published in the city, how great things Jesus had done unto him. 40 And it came to pass, that when Jesus was returned, the multitude received him: for they were all waiting for him. 41 And a man named Jairus, and he a ruler of the synagogue came: and fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him to come to his house; 42 For he had an only begotten daughter, twelve years of age, dying. And it came to pass as he went, the multitudes thronged him. 43 And a woman who had a bloody flux twelve years, whom no one was able to cure, 44 Came, and touched his garment: and immediately her bloody flux stanch'd. 45 But Jesus knowing that virtue had gone out of him, asked Who touched me? But when all denyed, Peter and those that were with him said, Master, the multitudes throng thee and press thee, and thou sayst, who hath touched me? 46 But he said, some one hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me. 47 And when the woman saw that she was not conceal'd, she came trembling, and falling down, she declared before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and that she was healed immediately. 48 But he said unto her, Daughter; Thy faith hath healed thee, go in peace. 49 While he was yet speaking there came certain from [o] the ruler of the synagogue saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master any farther. 50 When Jesus heard that word, he answered, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall recover. 51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no one to go in, save Peter, and John, and James, and the father and the mother of the damsel. 52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep ye not; For she is not dead, but sleepeth. 53 And they laughed at him, knowing that she was dead. 54 But he took her by the hand, and called, saying, Damsel arise. 55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat. 56 And when her parents saw it, they were astonished; but he charged them that they should tell no one what was done.

IX. Then having called the twelve together, he gave them power and authority over every dæmon, and to cure diseases.

## According to Luke.

2: And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. 3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither a staff, nor bag, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece. 4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. 5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the dust of your feet for a testimony against them. 6 And departing from the cities they came preaching the gospel, and healing every where. 7 Now Herod the tetrarch having heard what was done, he was perplexed, because it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead: 8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again. 9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I hear these things? And he desired to see him. 10 And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and went aside privately to a village called Bethsaida. 11 And the multitude when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed all them that had need of healing. 12 But when the day began to decline, then came the twelve and said unto him, dismiss the multitude, that they may go into the towns and fields round about, and lodge; for we are here in a desert place. 13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy food for all this people. 14 For they were about five thousand men. But he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company. 15 And they did so. 16 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he prayed, and blessed over them, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitudes. 17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken of broken meat that was left, twelve baskets. 18 And it came to pass as they were alone, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom do the multitudes say that I am? 19 And they answering, said, John the Baptist: but some Elias. 20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God. 21 But he strictly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell no one this thing, 22 Saying, That the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes and be slain, and rise again after three days. 23 And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and follow me. 24 For whosoever will save his soul, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25 For what will it advantage a man to gain the whole world, and lose himself? 26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Fathers, and of the holy angels. 27 But I tell you That truly, there be some of those who stand here who shall not at all taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his glory. 28 And it came to pass, about eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and James, and John, and went up into a mountain to pray. 29 And it came to pass as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment

## According to Luke.

white and glistering. 30 And behold two men talked with him, who were Moses and Elias. 31 Who appeared in glory : But they spake of his decease which he was to accomplish at Jerusalem. 32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep : and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. 33 And it came to pass, as they were separated from him, Peter said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here ; wilt thou that I make three tabernacles here, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias ? not knowing what things he said. 34 And while he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them : but they feared as they entered into the cloud. 35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased : hear him. 36 And when the voice was past, He was found alone : But they kept it close, and told no man in those days those things which they had seen. 37 And it came to pass on the next day, when he was come down from the mountain, a great multitude came together to him. 38 And behold, a man of the multitude cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee look upon my son, for he is mine only child. 39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him with foaming, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him. 40 And I besought thy disciples to set him free, and they could not. 41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you ? Bring thy son hither. 42 And as he was yet a coming, the demon threw him down, and disordered him : and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and it left him, and he delivered him to his father. 43 And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples, 44 Put ye these sayings into your ears : for the Son of man is to be delivered into the hands of men. 45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hidden from them, that they perceived it not : and they feared to ask him of that saying. 46 *[Then there arose a reasoning among them,]* which of them should be greatest. 47 And Jesus seeing the reasoning of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, 48 And said, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name, receiveth *[me, and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth]* him that sent me : for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great. 49 And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out demons in thy name ; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. 50 But Jesus said, Forbid him not : for he that is not against you is for you. 51 And it came to pass, when the days were fulfilled that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, 52 And sent messengers before his face : and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans to make ready for him. 53 And they did not receive him, because his face was going to Jerusalem. 54 And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did ? 55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. 56 And they went to another village. 57 And it



## According to Luke.

it came to pass that as they went in the way, one said unto him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. 58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the heaven nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 59 And he said unto another, Follow me: But he said, Suffer me first to go away, and bury my father. 60 But he said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. 61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first bid them farewell who are at home at my house. 62 But Jesus said unto him, No man looking back, and putting his hand to the plough, is fit for the kingdom of God.

X. But he appointed other seventy two also, and sent them by two and two before his face into every place, and city, whither he was to come: 2 But he said unto them, The harvest is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. 3 Go away: behold I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves. 4 Carry neither purse, nor bag, nor shoes: and salute no one by the way. 5 And into whatsoever house ye shall enter, first say, Peace be to this house. 6 And if indeed the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon him, but if not, your peace shall return to you. 7 But in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. 8 Into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they shall receive you, eat such things as are set before you. 9 And heal those that are sick therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto

you. 10 But unto whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets of it, and say, 11 Even the very dust of your feet which cleaveth to our feet we do wipe off against you. But know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh you. 12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for Sodom in the kingdom of God than for that city. 13 Wo unto thee, Chorazin, and Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had long ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon, than for you. 15 And thou, Capharnaum, shalt thou be exalted to heaven? or shalt thou be depressed to hades. 16 He that heareth you, heareth me: But he that heareth me, heareth him that sent me. 17 And the seventy two returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject unto us through thy name. 18 But he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. 19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents, and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall hurt you. 20 But in this joyce not, that the demons are subject unto you: but joyce, because your names are written in heaven. 21 But in that hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hidden these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so was thy good pleasure. 22 All things are delivered to me of the Father: and and no one knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

## According to Luke.

23 But he turned him unto the disciples, and said unto them, Blessed *are* the eyes which see what ye see, and the ears that hear things that ye hear. 24 For I say unto you, that many prophets have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. 25 But a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, What shall I do to inherit eternal life? 26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? 27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with thy whole heart, and with thy whole soul, and with thy whole strength; and thy neighbour as thy self. 28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. 29 But he willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? 30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, who both stripped *him* of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half-dead. 31 And there came a certain priest, who was going down that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. 32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, seeing him, passed by on the other side. 33 But a certain Samaritan as he journeyed, came to him: and when he saw him, he had compassion: 34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyl and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought *him* to an inn, and took care of him. 35 And on the morrow he took out two denarii, and gave to the host, and said, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou shalt spend more, when I return, I will repay *te*.

36 Which therefore seems to thee to have been neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? 37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. But Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou likewise. 38 Now it came to pass, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Mary, who sat at the Lords feet, and heard the word. 40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? speak to her therefore that she may help me. 41 And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art solicitous: 42 But one thing is needful. Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

XI. And it came to pass, that he was praying in a certain place; and as he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. 2 But *he said* unto them, When ye pray do not use vain repetitions as the rest do, for some think they shall be heard for their much speaking. But when ye pray say, Our Father who art in the heavens, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come upon us. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth: 3 Give us this day the bread necessary to our sustenance. 4 And forgive us our debts; for we also forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. 5 And he said, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at mid-night, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves. 6 For a friend in his journey is come from the field to me, and I have nothing to set before him: 7 But

## According to Luke.

7 But he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not : the door is already shut, and my children are with me in bed ; I cannot rise and give thee. 8 I say unto you, He will not rise and give him, because he is his friend : yet because of his importunity, he will rise and give *him* whatsoever he needeth. 9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you : seek, and ye shall find : knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10 For every one that asketh, receiveth : and he that seeketh, findeth : and to him that knocketh, is opened. 11 What son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, and he will give him a stone ? or if he also ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent ? 12 But if he shall ask an egg also, will he give him a scorpion. 13 If ye therefore being evil, know to give good gifts unto your children : how much more shall the Father from the heaven give a good gift to them that ask him ? 14 But when he had said these things, a dumb dæmoniack was brought to him : And when he had cast him out, all men did marvel. 15 And some of them said, He casteth out dæmons through Beelzebub, the chief of the dæmons. But he answered and said, How can Satan cast out Satan ? 16 And others tempting *him*, said, Give us a sign from Heaven. 17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it self, is made desolate : and a house against a house, will fall. 18 If Satan also be divided against himself, he will not stand : because ye say that I cast out dæmons by Beelzebub. 19 But if I by Beelzebub cast out the dæmons, by whom do your sons cast *them* out ? therefore shall they be your judges. 20 But if I by the finger of God cast out dæmons, then the kingdom of God is come upon you. 21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace. 22 But if a stronger shall come, he taketh all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. 23 He that is not with me, is against me : and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth. 24 But when the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through the waters [dry places] seeking rest : and not finding *it*, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. 25 And when he cometh, he findeth *it* swept and garnished. 26 Then he goeth, and taketh seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell : and the last state of that man becomes worse than the first. 27 And it came to pass as he was speaking these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. 28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they indeed that hear the word of God and keep it. 29 And when the multitudes were gathered thick together, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation : they seek a sign, and a sign shall not be given it, excepting the sign of Jonas. 30 For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. And as Jonas was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights, so shall also the son of man be in the earth. 31 The queen of the south shall rise up with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them : for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here. 33 But no one

## According to Luke.

when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel; but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. 34 The light of thy body is the eye: When thine eye is single, thy whole body also is light: but when it is evil, thy body also is dark. 35 If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness? 37 And a certain Pharisee asked him that he would dine with him: and he went in and sat down. 38 And He began to debate with himself, and to say, Why he had not first washed before dinner? 39 But the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees Hypocrites make clean the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inside is full of ravening and wickedness. 40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? 41 But rather give alms of such things as you have: and behold, all things shall be clean unto you. 42 But wo unto you, Pharisees: for ye tithe mint and rue, and every herb, and pass over judgment, and the love of God. 43 Wo unto you, O ye Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets: and the highest places at feasts. 44 Wo unto you, O ye scribes and Pharisees; for ye are graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them, know it not. 45 But one of the lawyers, answered and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also. 46 And he said, Wo unto you also, lawyers: for ye burden men with burdens grievous to be born, and ye your selves touch them not with one of your fingers. 47 Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. 48 Bear ye therefore witness that ye do not allow

the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, but ye build their sepulchres. 49 Therefore I send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they will slay and persecute: 50 That the blood of all the prophets, which hath been shed from the foundation of the world, unto this generation may be required; 51 From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, the Son of Barachias, whom they slew between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. 52 Wo unto you lawyers: for ye have hidden the key of knowledge: and ye entered not in your selves, and them that were entering in, ye hindered. 53 And as he said these things unto them, before all the people, the Pharisees and lawyers began to urge him vehemently, and to confer with him about many things: 54 Seeking to obtain some occasion against him, that they might have wherewith to accuse him.

XII. But as many people compassed him round about, insomuch that they crowded one upon another, he began to say unto the disciples, First of all beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 For there is nothing covered, that they shall not be made manifest; neither hid, that shall not be known. 3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light: and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops. 4 And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul, and have not any more that they can do. 5 But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear: Him who, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into gehenna; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

**According to Luke.**

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings. and not one of them is forgotten before God? 7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore; for ye are of more value than many sparrows. 8 Also I say unto you that, Whosoever shall confesse me before men, him shall the Son of man also confesse before the angels of God. 9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God. 10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man; it shall be forgiven him: but against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age, nor in that to come. 11 And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and magistrates, and powers, be not solicitous before hand how ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: 12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say, 13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. 14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge over you? 15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of all sort of covetousness: for life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which a man possesseth. 16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully. 17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? 18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and make them greater; and there will I collect all my fruits. 19 And I will say to my soul, Spoul, thou hast much goods: Be merry. 20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided? 21 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Be not solicitous for your life, what ye shall eat: neither for the body, what ye shall put on; 23 For the life is more than meat, and the body than raiment. 24 Consider the fowls of heaven: for they neither sow, nor reap: which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: Are ye not better than the fowls? 25 And which of you can add to his stature a cubit? 26 And why are ye solicitous for the rest? 27 Consider the lilies: They neither spin, nor weave: and yet I say unto you, that neither was Solomon in all his glory, arrayed like one of these. 28 If then God so clothe the grass of the field, which is to day, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more you, O ye of little faith? 29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. 30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: For your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 31 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you. 32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Fathers good pleasure to give you the kingdom. 33 Sell that ye have, and give alms: provide your selves bags which wax not old; a treasure in the heavens, that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. 34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. 35 Let your loyn be girded about, and lights burning; 36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. 37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make

## According to Luke.

them sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. 38 And if he shall come in the evening watch, and find them so, And if he come in the second or third watch they are blessed. 39 And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched. 40 But be ye ready: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. 41 And Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us? 42 And the Lord said, Who then is that wise and good steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them* their portion of meat in due season? 43 Blessed is that servant, when his lord when he cometh, shall find him so doing. 44 Verily I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. 45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, both eating, and drinking, and being drunken: 46 His lord will come in a day when he looketh nor for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. 47 And that servant who knew his lords will, but did not according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few. To whom much is given they will require the more from him: and to whom they have committed much, of him they will require the more. 49 I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled? 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I strained till it be accomplished? 51 Suppose ye that I am come to

make peace on earth? I tell you, No; but rather division. 52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. 53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against his father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against the daughter in law, and the daughter in law against the mother in law. 54 And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is. 55 And when ye see the south-wind blow, ye say, that there will be heat; and it cometh to pass. 56 Ye hypocrites, ye can indeed discern the face of the sky, and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discern this time? 57 And why do ye not even of your selves judge what is right. 58 When thou art with thine adversary before a Magistrate, in the way, give diligence that thou mayst be delivered from him; lest he condemn thee with the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer shall cast thee into prison. 59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the last mite.

XIII. There were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans, were sinners above all Galileans, because they suffered these things? 3 I tell you, No; but except ye shall repent, ye shall all likewise perish. 4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them: think ye that they were debtors above all men that dwell in Jerusalem? 5 And I tell you, No: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

## According to Luke.

6 He spake also this parable : one had a figtree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit there from, and found none. 7 And he said unto the dresser of his vineyard, behold, these three years, it is now that I come seeking fruit on this figtree, and find none : Bring the Ax ; cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground ? 8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone yet this year, till I shall dig about it, and cast a vessel of dung upon it. 9 Perhaps it may bear fruit ; and if not, after that thou shalt cut it down. 10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. 11 And behold, there was a woman who had an infirmity of spirit eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could not at all lift up *her self*. 12 And when Jesus saw her, he said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. 13 And he laid hands on her : and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. 14 But the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath, and said unto the multitude, There are six days in which they ought to work : in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. 15 But the Lord Jesus answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite ; doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox and ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering ? 16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day ? 17 And his adversaries were ashamed : and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things they had seen done by him. 18 And he said, unto what is the kingdom of God like ? and wherunto shall I compare it ? 19 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and became a tree, : and the fowls of the air lodged under the branches of it. 20 Wherunto is the kingdom of God like ? and to what shall I compare it ? 21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three Seahs of meal, till the whole was leavened. 22 And he went through the cities and countreys, teaching and journeying to Jerusalem. 23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are those that are saved few ? But he said unto them, 24 Strive to enter in at the strait door : for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not find it. 25 When once the master of the house shall be come in, and shut the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us ; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence you are : 26 Then shall ye begin to say, Lord, we have eat and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. 27 And he shall say, I tell you, I never knew you : depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. 28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you thrust out. 29 And they shall come from the east, and the west, and the north, and the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. 30 And behold, there are last who shall be first, and there are first who shall be last. 31 The same hour there came certain of the Pharisees, to him, saying, Get thee out, and depart hence : for Herod seeketh to kill thee. 32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out demons, and I shall do cures to day, and to morrow.

## According to Luke.

row, and the third day I shall be perfected. 33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day, and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. 34 Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto it, how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not? 35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: But I say unto you, Ye shall by no means see me, until the time shall come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

XIV. And it came to pass, as he entered into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath, that they watched him. 2 And behold, there was a man before him who had the dropie. 3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? 4 And they held their peace. And he took and healed him, and let him go: 5 And said unto them, Which of you shall have a sheep or an ox fallen into a pit on the sabbath-day and will not straightway pull him out? 6 But they did not give him answer to these things. 7 But he spake also a parable to those who were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats, saying unto them, 8 When thou shalt be invited to a wedding, sit not down in the highest seat, lest one more honourable than thou come; 9 And he that invited thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou with shame take the lowest place. 10 But when thou shalt be invited sit down in the lowest place; that when he that inviteth thee shall come, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up

higher: And then shalt thou have respect in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. 11 For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted. 12 Then said he also to him that invited him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not *thy* friends, nor thy brethren, nor neighbours, nor the rich, lest they also invite thee again, and a recompence be made thee. 13 But when thou makest a feast, invite the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: 14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the just. 15 And when one of them that sat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. 16 Then said he, A certain man made a great supper, and invited many: 17 And sent his servant at the hour of supper to say to them that were invited, to come, for all things were now ready. 18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said, I have bought a field, and I must needs go and see it: wherefore I cannot come. 19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: Wherefore I cannot come. 20 And another said, I have married a wife: wherefore I cannot come. 21 So the servant came, and shewed his lord all these things. And the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring hither the poor, and the maimed, and the lame, and the blind. 22 And the servant said, what thou hast commanded is done, and yet there is room. 23 And the lord said unto his servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them



## According to Luke.

to come in, that my house may be filled. 24 For I say unto you, that not one of the men who were invited, shall taste of my supper. 25 And there went multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them, 26 If any man comes to me, and hates not his father, and his mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. 27 And he that doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. 28 But which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have to finish it? 29 Left perhaps after he hath laid the foundation, but is not able to build and finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him, and to say, 30 This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 31 Or what king going to make war against another king, doth not presently sit down and consult first whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? 32 Or if not, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. 33 Likewise, also whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. 34 Salt is good: but if the salt have also lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? 35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; and they cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

XV. Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners to hear him. 2 And both the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying that This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them. 3 And he spake this parable unto

them, 4 What man of you shall have an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not he leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and goeth away and seeketh that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 But when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 But I say unto you, that likewise joy is in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, who need no repentance. 8 Either what woman having ten drachmæ, if she shall lose one, doth not she light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she shall find it? 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the drachma which I had lost. 10 Likewise I say unto you, There shall be joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth. 11 And he said, A certain man had two sons: 12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. 13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. 14 And when he had spent all, there arose a great famine in that land; and he began to be in want. 15 And he went and joyned himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into the fields to feed swine. 16 And he would fain have satisfied himself with the husks that the swine did eat: and no one gave unto him.

17 And

## According to Luke.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my fathers have bread more than enough, and I here perish with hunger! 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, 19 I am no longer worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But while he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and before thee, I am no longer worthy to be called thy son: Make me as one of thy hired servants. 22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet. 23 And bring the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and be merry: 24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is now found. And they began to be merry. 25 Now his elder son was in the field: But as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. 26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what could this be? 27 And he said, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf for him, because he hath received him found. 28 And he was angry, and would not go in: But his father came out, and began to intreat him. 29 And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou art not with me: I have never seen thee, thou hast not given me a kid, out of the goats, that I might dine with my friends: 30 But for thy son who hath devoured all he had with harlots, when he came thou hast killed the fatted calf. 31 And he said unto him, Thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine: 32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; was lost, and is found.

XVI. And he said also unto the disciples, There was a certain rich man who had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. 2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? I give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayst be no longer steward. 3 But the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. 4 I know what I will do; that when I shall be put from the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. 5 So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first, how much owest thou unto my lord? 6 And he said, An hundred baths of oil. But he said unto him, take thy bill, and write fifty. 7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred cores of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. 8 And the lord commended the unjust steward because he had done prudently, wherefore I say unto you, the children of this age are in their generation more prudent than the children of light. 9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when it fails, they may receive you into everlasting tabernacles. 10 He that is faithful in the least, is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in a little, is unjust also in much. 11 If therefore ye have not

been

## According to Luke:

been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true? 12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another's, who shall give you that which is your own? 13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. 14 And the Pharisees also, being covetous, heard *this*, and they derided him. 15 And he said unto them, Ye are they who justify your selves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is high amongst men, is a-bomination in the sight of God. 16 The law and the prophets prophesied until John: from thence the kingdom of God is preached, and every one forceth unto it. 17 And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. 18 Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery. 19 But he spake also another parable: There was a rich man, who was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day. 20 But a certain beggar named Lazarus, was laid at his gate full of ulcers. 21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his ulcers. 22 And it came to pass that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried. 23 And in *hades* he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus dwelling in his bosom. 24 And he cried earnestly and said, Father Abraham have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life-time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is here comforted, and thou art pained. 26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they who would pass to you, cannot; neither can they pass hither, from thence. 27 But he said, I pray thee therefore, Father Abraham, that thou wouldst send him to my father's house: 28 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. 29 But Abraham said unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. 30 And he said, No, Father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. 31 But he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rise from the dead, and go away to them.

XVII. Then said he unto his disciples, It is impossible but that scandals will come: but wo *unto him*, through whom they come. 2 But it were better for him, that a millstone had been hanged about his neck, and he had been cast into the sea, than that he should scandalize one of these little ones. 3 Take heed to your selves: If thy brother shall trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he shall repent, forgive him. 4 And if he shall sin against thee seven times in a day, and seven times turn again to thee saying, I repent; forgive him. 5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. 6 But he said unto them, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might have said unto this mountain, remove hence to yonder place, and it should have removed; and unto this *ty* camine-

## According to Luke.

tree, be thou planted in the sea ; and it should obey you. 7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding, when he is come from the field, will he say presently unto him, Go and sit down ? 8 But he will say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken ; and afterward eat and drink ? 9 Doth he thank the servant because he hath done what he was bidden ? I suppose not. 10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done whatsoever I say, say ye, We are unprofitable servants : we have done what we ought to do. 11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. 12 And as he entered into a certain village where there were ten men that were lepers, they stood afar off : 13 And they cried with a loud voice, and said, Jesus Master, have mercy on us. 14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Be ye healed: Go shew your selves unto the priests. And it came to pass that as they went, they were cleansed. 15 And one of them, when he saw that he was cleansed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God. 16 And fell down on his face at his feet : and he was a Samaritan. 17 And Jesus answering said to them, Were there not ten cleansed ? where are the nine ? 18 None of them is found that will return to give glory to God, save this stranger. 19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way ; For thy faith hath made thee whole. 20 And when he was asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come ; he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation. 21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or, lo there : do not believe them, for behold, the kingdom of God is within you. 22 He said therefore unto the disciples, The days will come when ye shall desire one of these days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. 23 And they will say to you See here, or, see there : you shall not go out, nor follow them. 24 For as the lightning that lighteth out of the one part under heaven, shineth, so shall also the Son of man be in his day. 25 But he must first suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. 26 And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. 27 They did eat, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark : and the flood came, and destroyed them all. 28 Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot, they eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded : 29 On the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. 30 Even thus shall it be in the day of the Son of man, when he shall be revealed. 31 In that day, he who shall be upon the house-top, and his goods in the house, let him not come down to take them away : and he who is in the field, let him likewise not return back. 32 Remember Luths wife. 33 Whosoever shall save his life, shall lose it : and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. 34 I tell you, in that night there will be two men upon one bed ; the one will be taken, and the other will be left. 35 Two women will be grinding together ; the one will be taken, and the other left. 36 Two men will be in the field ; the one will be taken, and the other left. 37 And they answered and said, Where, Lord ? And he said unto

## According to Luke.

unto them, Where the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

XVIII. He spake also a parable unto them, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; 2 There was in a certain city a certain judge, who feared not God, neither regarded man. 3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. 4 And he would not for a certain time: but afterward he came to himself, and said, Though I fear not God, and regard not man, 5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will go away and avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. 6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. 7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, while they cry day and night unto him, and he compassionates them? 8 I tell you, He will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth? 9 And he spake unto certain who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised other men: 10 Two men went up to the temple to pray; one a Pharisee, and one a publican. 11 The Pharisee stood by himself and prayed thus, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. 12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. 13 And the publican standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man went down justified rather than that Pharisee: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted. 15 They brought unto him also little children, that he

should touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them. 16 But Jesus called them unto him, saying, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. 17 For Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein. 18 And a certain ruler asked him, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 19 But he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, God. 20 Thou knowest the commandments: But he said which? And Jesus said, This Thou shalt not commit adultery, thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and mother. 21 But he said, All these have I kept from my youth. 22 Now when Jesus heard him, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in the heavens: and come, follow me. 23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich. 24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! 25 For it is easier for a camel to pass through a needles eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saved? 27 And he said, The things which are impossible with men, are possible with God: 28 And Peter said, Lo, we have left what was our own, and followed thee. 29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no one that hath left houses, or parents, or brethren or sisters or wife, or children in this time for the kingdom of Gods sake. 30 Who

## According to Luke.

Who shall not receive sevenfold more in this present time, and in the age to come, eternal life. 31 Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man will be accomplished. 32 For he will be delivered unto the Gentiles, and be mocked, and spit on. 33 And they will scourge him, and put him to death: and the third day he will rise again. 34 And they understood none of these things: But the saying was hidden from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken. 35 And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way-side begging, 36 And hearing the multitude passing by, he asked what it could mean. 37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. 38 But he cried, saying, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me. 39 And they who went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me. 40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought: and when he was come near, he asked him, 41 What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? But he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. 42 And he answered him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee. 43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave glory to God.

XIX. And He entered into Jericho and passed through it. 2 And behold, a man named Zaccheus; He was the chief publican, He was rich. 3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and could not for

the multitude, because he was little of stature. 4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore-tree to see him; for he was to pass by that way. 5 And it came to pass that as he passed by, he saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house. 6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him rejoicing. 7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. 8 And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor: and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore four-fold. 9 But Jesus said unto him, that This day is salvation in this house, forasmuch as he also is the son of Abraham. 10 For the Son of man is come to seek and save that which is lost. 11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because it seemed that the kingdom of God would immediately appear. 12 But he said, A certain noble man went into a far country, to receive a kingdom, and return. 13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Trade till I come. 14 But the citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us. 15 And it came to pass, that as he returned, having received the kingdom, he commanded his servants to be called, to whom he had given the money, that he might know what every man had gained by trading. 16 Now the first came saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. 17 And he said unto him, Well done, thou good servant: because thou

## According to Luke.

thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. 18 Another came and said, Lord, thy pound hath made five pounds. 19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. 20 And another came saying, Lord, behold, thy pound, which I have kept laid up in an *bindkerchief*. 21 For I feared thee; For thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou laidst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. 22 But he said unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man; I take up that I laid not down, and I reap that I did not sow: 23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? 24 But he said unto them that stood by, Take *it* from him and carry *it* to him that hath ten pounds. 26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath, is added: and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. 27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me. And cast ye the unprofitable servant unto the outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 28 And when he had thus spoken, he went, ascending to Jerusalem. 29 And it came to pass when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount of Olives*, he sent two of his disciples, 30 Saying, go ye into the village over against you; and entering ye shall find a colt, whereon never man had sat: and loosing him, bring him hither. 31 And if any man ask you, thus shall ye say, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went away. 34 They answered, that The Lord had need of him. 35 And they brought the colt to Jesus: and cast their garments upon him, and they set Jesus upon him. 36 And as they went, they spread their clothes. 37 And when they were come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God, for all the things that they had seen done. 38 Saying, Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord: Blessed be the King. Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest. 39 But some of the Pharisees from among the multitude, said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. 40 But he answered and said unto them, I say unto you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would cry out. 41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, 42 Saying, If thou also hadst known in this day, what things concern thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. 43 For the days will come upon thee, that thine enemies will cast a trench, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, 44 And will level thee even with the ground, and thy children; and they will not leave stone upon stone in this whole city, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation. 45 But he came into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought, and overthrew the tables of the money changers. 46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves. 47 And he was teaching daily in the temple. But the chief priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him, 48 And found not what

## According to Luke.

that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 29 There were seven brethren with us: and the first took a wife, and died without a child left. 30 And the second; 31 And the third; and in like manner the seven. And they left no child, and died. 32 At last the woman also died. 33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she be? for seven had her to wife. 34 And He said unto them, The children of this world are begotten and beget, marry and are given in marriage: 35 But they who shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage. 36 Neither shall they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels with God, being the children of the resurrection. 37 Now that the dead are raised, Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. 38 He is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him. 39 Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said. 40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all. 41 And he said unto them, How say they that Christ is the son of David? 42 And David himself saith in the book of psalms, The LORD saith unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 43 Till I put thine enemies beneath thy feet. 44 David calleth him Lord; how is he his son? 45 And in the audience of all the people, he said unto the disciples, 46 Beware of the scribes, who desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seat in the synagogues, and the chief seats at feasts. 47 De-

vouring-widows houses, for a shew making long prayers: the same shall receive greater judgement.

XXI. And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. 2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in two mites, which are a farthing, 3 And he said, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all. 4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had. 5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said, 6 Ye see these things; the days will come, in the which there shall not be left stone upon stone in the wall here, that shall not be thrown down. 7 And the disciples asked him, saying, Master, When will these things be? and what will be the sign of thy coming? 8 But he said, See that ye be not deceived: for many will come in my name, saying, I am He, and the time draweth near: go ye not after them. 9 But when ye shall hear of wars and disturbances, be not afraid: for these things must first come to pass, but the end is not quickly. 10 For Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11 And great earthquakes will be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearful sights, and great signs will be from heaven. 12 But before all these things they will lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and to prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my names sake. 13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony. 14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before hand, what ye shall answer. 15 For I will give you a mouth,



## According to Luke.

and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to resist. 16 And ye will be betrayed both by parents, and brethren; and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you will they cause to be put to death. 17 And ye will be hated of all for my namesake. 18 But an hair of your head shall not perish. 19 In your patience possess ye your souls. 20 And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then ye will know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 21 Then let them who are in Judea, flee to the mountains; and let them who are in the midst of it, [not] depart out; and let not them that are in the countries, enter thereinto. 22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23 Wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days: for there will be great distress in the land, and wrath in this people. 24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword; and shall be led away captive unto all nations; and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles; until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. 25 And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, and perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring: 26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for expectation of those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers which are in heaven shall be shaken. 27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with great power and glory. 28 And when these things are coming to pass, then look up, and lift up ~~your~~ heads for your redemption draweth nigh. 29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees; 30 When they now shoot forth, ye see their fruit, and know that summer is already nigh at hand. 31 So likewise ye, when ye shall see these things, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh. 32 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall by no means pass away, till all these things be done. 33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. 34 Take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be over-charged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and that day come upon you unawares. 35 For as a snare shall it come on them that dwell on the face of the whole-land. 36 But Watch ye and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and ye shall stand before the Son of man. 37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and lay at night in the mount that is called *the mount of Olives*. 38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

XXII. Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passover. 2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might destroy him; But they feared the people. 3 And Satan entered into Judas surnamed Scairioth, being of the number of the twelve. 4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests, how he might betray him. 5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. 6 And he promised; and sought opportunity to betray him in the absence of the multitude. 7 Now the day of the passover came, when the passover must be killed. 8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. 9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare it for thee? 10 And

## According to Luke:

10 And he said, Behold, when ye enter into the city, a man shall meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in. 11 And ye shall say unto the master of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 12 He shall shew you an upper room furnished: there make ready. 13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover. 14 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the apostles with him. 15 And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer. 16 For I say unto you, that I will not eat thereof, until it be eaten new in the kingdom of God. 17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take ye this, and divide it among your selves. 18 I say unto you, I will not from this time drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. 19 And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me. 20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you. 21 But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is on the table. 22 For the Son of man indeed goeth as it was determined: but wo unto him by whom he is betrayed. 23 And they began to enquire among themselves, who it was that was to do this. 24 And there was also a strife among them, who should be the greatest. 25 But he said unto them, The king of the Gentiles lord it over them; and they that exercise authority over them, are called benefactors. 26 But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest among you let him be as the least; and the servant more than he who sitteth down. 27 For I am come in the midst of you, not as he who sitteth down, but as he that serveth. 28 And you are increased in my ministration, as he that serveth; who have continued with me in my temptations. 29 And I appointed unto you a kingdom, as the Father hath appointed unto me: 30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in the kingdom, and sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. 31 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired you, that he may sift you as wheat: 32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; But when thou art converted, convert also thy brethren. 33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both to prison, and to death. 34 And he said, I say to thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow to day, until thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me. 35 And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and bag, and shoes, lacked ye any thing; And they said, Nothing. 36 And he said, But now he that hath a bag shall take it, and likewise a purse: and he that hath not a sword, shall sell his garment, and buy one. 37 For I say, that this which is written, must be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned among the transgressors: For These things that concern me have an end. 38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough. 39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him. 40 And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation. 41 But he was withdrawn from them about a stones throw,

## According to Luke.

throw, and kneeled down, and prayed, 42 Saying, Father, Let not my will, but thine be done If thou be willing remove this cup from me. 43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. 44 And being in an agony, he prayed very earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground. 45 And when he arose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow, 46 And said unto them, Sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. 47 And while he yet spake, behold, a great multitude, and he that was called Judas Scarioth, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, and kissed him. For he had given them this sign, whomsoever I shall kiss that is he. 48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss? 49 When they which were about him, saw what was done; they said unto the Lord, Shall we smite with the sword? 50 And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear. 51 And he answered and said, Suffer ye thus far, And he stretched out his hand, and touched his ear, and his ear was restored. 52 Then he said unto the chief priests and captains of the people, and the elders who were come to him, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves? 53 When I was dayly with you in the temple, ye stretched not out hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness. 54 Then took they him, and led him, into the high priests house. And Peter followed him afar off. 55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the court and were set round it; and Peter warming himself with them, 56

A certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him. 57 And he denied, saying, I know him not. 58 And a little while after another saw him, and said the same, Thou art also of them: And he said, Man, I am not. 59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, Of a truth I say, this man also was with him; for he is a Galilean. 60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayst. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew. 61 But the Lord Jesus turned, and looked upon Peter; and he remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crew, thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me. 62 And he went out, and wept bitterly. 63 But the men that held him, mocked him. 64 And when they had blind-folded his face, they struck him, and said, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee? 65 And blaspheming they spake many other things against him. 66 And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests and the scribes were assembled together, and led him away unto their council, 67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? But he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe. 68 And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go. 69 Now from this time shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God. 70 But they all said, Art thou the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am. 71 And they said, What need have we of witnesses? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

XXIII. And they arose, and led him unto Pilate. 2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We have

## According to Luke.

have found this *man* perverting our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, but saying, that he himself is Christ, the king. 3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? and he answered him saying, Thou sayst it. 4 Pilate said to the chief priests and to the multitudes, I find no fault in this man. 5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all the land, beginning from Galilee to this place. 6 Now when Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. 7 And knowing that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem in those days. 8 And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long time, because he had heard of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. 9 And he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. 10 And the chief priests and scribes stood, and vehemently accused him. 11 And Herod with his soldiers, set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a shining robe, and sent him back to Pilate. 12 But the same day Pilate and Herod who had been at enmity, were made friends. 13 But Pilate when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and all the people, 14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: But I having examined him before you, have found no fault in him. 15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and nothing worthy of death is done unto him. 16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him. 17 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas: 18 Who for a certain sedition made in the city and for murder was cast into prison. 19 Now of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast. 20 But Pilate willing to release Jesus, spake again to them. 21 But they cried in answer Crucifie, crucifie. 22 And he said unto them the third time, What evil then hath he done? I find no cause of death in him: But I will chastise him, and let him go. 23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed. 24 And Pilate gave sentence that what they required should be done. 25 And he released him that for murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will. 26 But as they led him away, they laid hold on one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. 27 And there followed him a company of people, and women who bewailed and lamented him. 28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem weep not for me, nor lament: but weep for your selves, and your children. 29 For the days will come, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave nourishment. 30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. 31 For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry? 32 And there were also two other malefactors led with him to be put to death. 33 And when they were come to the place which is called the Scull, there they crucified him, and the malefactors together; one on

## According to Luke:

on the right hand, and the other on the left. 34 But they parted his raiment, and cast a lot. 35 And the people stood beholding. But they derided him, and they said to him, Thou hast saved others; save thy self, if thou beest Christ, the Son of God: If thou beest the chosen, 36 And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him; and they brought him vinegar, 37 And saying, Hail king of the Jews, and putting a crown of thorns on him. 38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, Latin, Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS. 39 And one of the Malefactors blasphemed him: 40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God? for we are under the same judgement? 41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of what we have done: but this man hath done no wicked thing. 42 And turning to the Lord, he said to him, Remember me in the day of thy coming. 43 But Jesus answered and said unto him, that rebuked the other, Be of good courage, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. 44 And it was the sixth hour, and there was darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour. 45 And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit: And having said thus, he gave up the ghost. 46 But the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent. 47 And the centurion cried out, and glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man. 48 And all the multitude that came together to the sight, having beheld the things which were done, smote their breasts, and their foreheads, and returned. 49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from

Galilee, stood afar off to behold these things. 50 And behold one named Joseph, being a counsellor, a good man, and a just: 51 He had not consented to the counsel and deed of them: he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who waited for the kingdom of God. 52 He went unto Pilate, and asked the body of Jesus. 53 And he took down, and wrapped the body of Jesus in linen, and laid him in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid: 54 And when he had laid him, he put to the sepulchre a stone which twenty men could hardly roll. 55 And it was the day before the sabbath, And two women followed, who came from Galilee together, and beheld his sepulchre. 56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath-day.

XXIV. But upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing what they had prepared, and certain with them. 2 But they reasoned among themselves who now shall roll away the stone? But They found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. 3 And they entered in, and found not the body. 4 And it came to pass, as they were perplexed about it; behold two men stood by them in a shining garment. 5 And they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth; But they said unto them, Why seek ye him that is alive among the dead? 6 Remember how many things he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, 7 That the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. 8 And they remembered his words, 9 And returned, and told all these things unto the eleven, and all the rest, 10 Mary,

## According to Luke:

10 Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary ~~the mother~~ of James, and other women with them, told these things unto the apostles. 11 And these words seemed to them as an idle tale, and they believed them not. 12 But there were two of them who went that same day to a village whose name was Oulammaus, which was from Jerusalem threecore furlongs. 13 And they talked together of all these things which had happened. 14 And it came to pass, that while they communed, and enquired, Jesus drew near, and went with them. 15 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him. 16 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have among your selves, walking sad? 17 And one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, not knowing the things which are come to pass in it in these dayes? 18 But he said unto him: What things? The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word, before God and all the people: 19 How the chief priests and our rulers delivered this man unto the judgement of death, and have crucified him. 20 But we trusted that it was He who was to redeem Israel: and with all these things to day is the third day since these things were done. 21 Yes, and certain women also made us astonished, who were early at the sepulchre: 22 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. 23 And certain of them who were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found as the women said; but him we have not seen. 24 But he said unto them, O fools, and slow of

heart as to all that the prophets have spoken! 25 That Christ ought to have suffered these things, and to have entered into his glory? 26 And he began from Moses, and all the prophets, to expound unto them in the Scriptures, the things concerning himself. 27 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. 28 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us; for it is towards evening, and the day far spent; and he went in to tarry with them. 29 And it came to pass as he sat at meat he took bread, and blessed, and gave to them. 30 And when they had received the bread from him, their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight. 31 But they said among themselves, was not our heart hidden within us, as he talk'd with us by the way, as he opened to us the scriptures? 32 And they rose up the same hour sorrowful, and returned to Jerusalem; and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them. 33 Who said, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared unto Simon. 34 And they told what things were done in the way, and that he was known of them in breaking of bread. 35 And as they thus spake, he himself stood in the midst of the disciples. 36 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. 37 But he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? 38 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me and see, for a spirit hath not bones and flesh as ye see me have. 39 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said, Have ye here any meat? 40 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish

## According to Luke.

5th. 43 And he took it, and did eat before them. 44 And he said unto them, These were my words which I spake unto you while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and the Prophets, and the Psalms concerning me. 45 Then opened he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures. 46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, that Christ should suffer, and rise the third day. 47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, as far as all nations; beginning at Jerusalem. 48 And ye are also witnesses of these things. 49 And behold I send the promise upon you; but tarry ye in the city until ye be endued with power from on high. 50 And he led them out to Bethany, and he lift up his hands, and blessed them. 51 And it came to pass while he blessed them, he was parted from them. 52 And they returned to Jerusalem with great joy. 53 And were continually in the temple praising God.

*The Gospel according to LUKE is finished.*

The Gospel according to MARK begins.

### CHAP I.

THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God, 2 As it is written in Esaias the prophet, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way. 3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the ways of our God, make his paths straight. 4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins. 5 And there went out unto him all the country of Judea, and all they of Jerusalem, and were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins. 6 And John was clothed with camels hair: and he did eat locusts and wild hony: 7. 8 And he said unto them, I indeed baptize you with water; but there cometh one after me who is mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose, and he baptize you with the Holy Ghost, 9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came

from Nazareth of Galilee, and shall baptize of John in Jordan. 10 And coming up from the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him. 11 And there was a voice from the heavens, Thou art my beloved Son, In Thee I am well pleased. 12 And immediately the Holy Spirit driveth him out unto the wilderness. 13 And he was in the wilderness forty days, and was tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the angels ministered unto him. 14 Now after that John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, 15 Saying, The times are fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe in the gospel. 16 Now as he passed by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting nets into the sea: for they were fishers. 17 And Jesus said unto them, Come after me, and I will make you become fishers of men. 18 And straightway they forsook

## According to Mark.

forsook all, and followed him. 19 And when he had gone a little further, he saw James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets. 20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship, with the hired servants, and followed him. 21 And they went into Capharnaum, and straightway on the sabbath he entered into the synagogue, and taught them. 22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. 23 And there was in the synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out, 24 Saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God. 25 And he rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and go out of the man thou unclean Spirit. 26 And the unclean Spirit went out, When he had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he went out of him. 27 And they were all amazed, inasmuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What doctrine is that? Or, what new power is this that he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they obey him. 28 And immediately his fame went forth unto all the region round about Galilee. 29 And when he was come out of the synagogue, he came into the house of Simon, and Andrew; with James and John. 30 But Simons wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and presently they tell him of her. 31 And he came to her and took her by the hand, and lift her up, and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them. 32 And at even, when the sun was set, they brought unto him all that were ill with diverse diseases, and them that were possessed with *dæmons*. 33 And the whole city was gathered together at his door. 34 And he healed them, those that had *dæmons* he cast them out of them, and suffered them not to speak; because they knew him; and he healed many that were ill of diverse diseases, and cast out many *dæmons*. 35 And in the morning a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. 36 Then Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him. 37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek thee. 38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next villages, and into the cities, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth. 39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out *dæmons*. 40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and saying, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 41 And being angry he put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean. 42 And immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed. 43 And he charged him in anger, and forthwith cast him out, 44 And saith unto him, See thou tell it not to any man: but go away, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 45 But he went out, and began to publish and to blaze abroad the matter; insomuch that he could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

II. And entering again into Capharnaum, after *some* days, it was heard that he was in the house. 2 And straightway many were gathered



## According to Mark.

thered together, inſomuch that there was no longer room to receive *them*, no not ſo much as about the door : and he preached the word unto them. 3 And they came unto him, bringing a Paralytick who was carried of four. 4 And when they could not come nigh for the multitude, they uncovered the roof where Jeſus was : and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the couch upon which the ſick of the palsie was lying. 5 When Jeſus ſaw their faith, he ſaid unto the Paralytick, Son, *thy* ſins be forgiven thee. 6 But there were certain of the ſcribes ſitting there, and reaſoning in their hearts, ſaying, 7 Why doth this man thus ſpeak ? he blaſphemes, who can forgive ſins but God ? 8 And when Jeſus perceived in *his* ſpirit, that they ſo reaſoned within themſelves, he ſaid unto them, Why reaſon ye theſe things in your hearts ? 9 Whether is it eaſier ſaid to the paralytick, Arife, and take up thy couch and walk, or to ſay *thy* Sins be forgiven thee ? 10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive ſins, he ſaith to the paralytick, 11 I ſay unto thee Arife, take up thy couch, and go unto thine houſe. 12 And immediately he got up, took up the couch, and went out before them all, inſomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, and ſaid, We never ſaw it on this faſhion. 13 And he went out by the ſea-side, and all the multitude reſorted unto him, and he taught them. 14 And as he paſſed by, he ſaw <sup>† read</sup> James *the ſon* of Alphaeus ſitting at the receipt of cuſtom, and ſaid unto him, Follow me. And he aroſe and followed him. 15 And it came to paſſ. that as Jeſus was ſitting at meat in his houſe, many publicans and ſinners ſat together with Jeſus and his diſciples : for there were many, who alſo followed him. 16 And the ſcribes and Pharifees ſaw him eating with publicans and ſinners ; and they ſaid unto his diſciples, How is it that he eateth with publicans and ſinners ? 17 When Jeſus heard *it*, he ſaith, They that are well, have no need of the phyſician, but they that are ill : I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners. 18 And the diſciples of John, and the Pharifees uſed to faſt ; and they come, and ſay unto him, Why do the diſciples of John and of the Pharifees faſt, but thy diſciples faſt not ? 19 And he ſaid unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber faſt, while the bridegroom is with them ? 20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they faſt on that day. 21 No one alſo ſeweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment : elſe the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worſe. 22 And no one putteth new wine into old bottles, elſe the wine doth burſt the bottles, and the wine is ſpilled, and the bottles will be ſpoiled. 23 And it came to paſſ again, that he went through the corn-fields on the ſabbath, and *his* diſciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. 24 But the Pharifees ſaid, Behold, why do thy diſciples on the ſabbath, that which is not lawful ? 25 And he anſwering ſaid unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him ? 26 He went unto the houſe of God, and did eat the ſhew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the prieſts, he gave alſo to them which were with him ?

48 But

## According to Mark.

28 But I say unto you, The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

III. And he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there who had a withered hand. 2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath, that they might accuse him. 3 And he saith unto the man who had the withered hand, Stand in the midst. 4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace. 5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the deadness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored presently. 6 And the Pharisees went out, and took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. 7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and Judea, 8 And Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and those that were beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre, and they about Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what things he did, came unto him. 9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him. 10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had strokes, and unclean spirits. 11 When therefore they saw him, they fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. 12 And he earnestly charged them, that they should not make him known. 13 And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they

came unto him. 14 And he ordained that they should be twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach the Gospel. 15 And he gave them power to heal diseases, and to cast out demons. 16 And Simon he surnamed Peter. 17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, the sons of thunder. 18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, and Simon the Canaanite, 19 And Judas Scarioth, who also betrayed him: and they went into an house. 20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. 21 And when the scribes and the rest that were about him, heard, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself. 22 And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the demons casteth he out demons. 23 And the Lord Jesus calling them unto him, said in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? 24 And if a kingdom be divided against it self, that kingdom cannot be established. 25 And if an house be divided against it self, that house cannot be established. 26 And If Satan cast out Satan, he is divided, against himself and his kingdom cannot be established, but hath an end. 27 No one can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will plunder his house. 28 Verily I say unto you, that All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: 29 But whosoever shall blaspheme the Holy Ghost hath not forgiveness,

## According to Mark:

forgiveness, but shall be guilty of eternal sin. 30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit. 31 And he cometh *into the house*, and his mother, and his brethren standing without, sent unto him, calling him. 32 And he sat by the multitude: and they say unto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren, and thy sisters without, seek thee. 33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or brethren? 34 And he looked on those that were round about him, and said, Behold, my mother and brethren. 35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

IV. And he began again to teach by the sea-side: and there was gathered unto him much people, so that he entered into a ship, and sat  $\neq$  beyond the sea, and the whole multi-

$\neq$  read by tude was  $\dagger$  beyond the sea. 2

$\dagger$  read by And he taught them many things in parables, and said unto them in his doctrine, 3 Harken, behold, there went out a sower: 4 And it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it. 5 And others fell on stony grounds, and because they had not much earth, immediately they sprang up because they had no depth of earth. 6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched, and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And others fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked them, and it yielded no fruit. 8 And others fell on good ground, and did yield fruit, that sprang up and increased, and brought forth some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred. 9 And he said, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear, and he that hath understanding, let him understand. 10 And

when he was alone, his disciples asked of him what the parable was.

11 And he says unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all things are said in parables: 12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not mind; lest at any time they should be converted, and I should forgive *their* sins. 13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will you know all parables? 14 The sower soweth the word: 15 And these are they by the way-side, in which the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they which are sown on stony ground, who when they shall hear the word, receive it with gladness: 17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction and persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they will be scandalized.

18 And others are they which are sown among thorns: such as have heard the word, 19 And the cares of life, and the deceits of the world, entering in, choke the word, and they become unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty, some sixty, and some an hundred. 21 And he said unto them, Is a candle lighted to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick? 22 For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad. 23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. 24

And he said unto them, Take heed what

## According to Mark.

what you hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you. 25 For he that hath, to him shall be added: and he that hath not, from him, shall be taken even that which he hath. 26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as a man, that should cast seed upon the ground, 27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. 28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of it self, first the blade, then the ear, after that is the full corn in the ear. 29 But when the fruit is also brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. 30 And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? 31 *It is like a grain of mustard, which when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be upon the earth. 32 It becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the heaven may lodge under the shadow of it. 33 And with many such parables spake he the word as they were able to bear it. 34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded them to his disciples. 35 And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side. 36 And when they sent away the multitude, they take him also even as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other ships. 37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that the ship was now full. 38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awaking him, say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? 39 And arising he rebuk-*

*ed the wind, and the sea, and said Peace, and be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. 40 And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful? have ye not yet faith? 41 And they feared a great fear, and said one to another, Who then is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?*

V. And they came unto the other side, into the country of the Gerasens. 2 And when they were come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit, 3 Who had *his* dwelling among the tombs, and no one could any longer bind him, no not with chains: 4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains with which they bound him; and he had plucked them asunder, and the fetters had been broken in pieces: neither could any one tame him. 5 And night and day, he was in the tombs, and in the mountains, crying, and cutting himself with stones. 6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshiped him, 7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not. 8 For Jesus said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit. 9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, My name is Legion: for we are many. 10 And besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country. 11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountain, an herd of swine feeding. 12 And the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may go away unto them. 13 And forthwith the Lord Jesus sent them into the swine. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine, and the herd

## According to Mark.

ran violently down a steep place into the sea, about two thousand, and were choked in the sea. 14 And they that fed them fled, and told it unto the city, and unto the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done. 15 And they come to Jesus, and see him sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind, and they were afraid. 16 But they that saw it, told them how it happened to the dæmoniack himself, and also concerning the swine. 17 And they prayed him to depart out of their coasts. 18 And when he came into the ship, the dæmoniack began to pray him that he might be with him. 19 And Jesus suffered him not, and saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how many things God hath done for thee, and because he hath had compassion on thee. 20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how many things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel. 21 And when Jesus was passed over again unto the other side, a great multitude gathered unto him again, nigh unto the sea. 22 And there cometh a certain ruler of the synagogue, and fell at his feet, 23 Beseeching him, and saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, Come and touch her with thy hands that she may be healed, and she shall live. 24 And he went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him. 25 And a certain woman who had an issue of blood twelve years, 26 Who had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather worse, 27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the multitude behind, and touched his garment. 28 Saying within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be well. 29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that stroke. 30 And Jesus immediately knowing in himself, that virtue had gone out of him, and turning him about in the multitude, he said, Who touched my clothes? 31 But his disciples say unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayst thou, Who rouched me? 32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing. 33 But the woman fearing and trembling, on account of what she had done secretly, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth. 34 But Jesus said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy stroke. 35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue certain who said to him, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any farther? 36 When Jesus heard this word, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe. 37 And suffered no one to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John his brother. 38 And they come to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and saw the tumult, of them that wept and wailed greatly. 39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and why weep ye? the little child is not dead, but sleepeth. 40 But they laughed at him: but when he had himself put the multitude out, he taketh the father and the mother of the little child, and these that were with him, and entered in where the little child was. 41 And he took the little child by the hand and said unto her, Thabita cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee arise. 42 And straightway.

## According to Mark.

straightway the damsel arose, and walked about; Now she was twelve years of *age*, and they were all astonished with a great astonishment. 43 And he charged them, that no one should know this: and said that there should be given her to eat.

VI. And he went down from thence, and came into his own country, and his disciples follow him. 2 And when the sabbath was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many when they had heard, were astonished at his doctrine, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom *is* this which is given unto him, that even such powers are wrought by his hands? 3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and the brother of James, and Joses, and of Judas and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were scandalized at him. 4 And Jesus said unto them, that A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. 5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed *them*. 6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching. 7 And when he had called unto him the twelve disciples, he sent them forth by two and two, giving them power *over* unclean spirits. 8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only: neither a bag nor bread, nor money in *their* purse: 9 Be shod with sandals: and not to put on two coats. 10 And he said unto them, Into what place soever ye enter, there abide till ye depart from that place. 11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye de-

part thence, shake off the dust of your feet, for a testimony against them. 12 And they went out, and preached that they should repent. 13 And they call out many *dæmons*, and anointing with oyl many that were sick, healed *them*. 14 And king Herod heard, for his name was spread abroad, and they said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works are done by him. 15 But Others said, That he is Elias. And others said, That he is one of the prophets. 16 But when Herod heard, he said, It is he whom I beheaded, He is risen from the dead. 17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him, and call him into prison, for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife: for he had married her. 18 For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brothers wife. 19 Therefore Herodias watched him, and would have killed him, and could not. 20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just and holy man, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. 21 But when a convenient day was come, Herod on his birth-day made a supper to *his* lords, captains of thousands, and chief men of Galilee. 22 But when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, If thou Ask of me any thing, whatsoever thou wilt, I will give *it* thee. 23 And he sware unto her strongly, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give *it* thee, even unto the half of my kingdom. 24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist. 25 And she came in unto the king, and said,

## According to Mark.

I will that thou give me here in a dish the head of John the Baptist. 26 The king when he heard was exceeding sorry, yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes who sat with him, he would not refuse her. 27 But immediately he sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison. 28 And brought the head in a dish, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother. 29 But when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb. 30 And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, what they had done, and what they had taught. 31 And Jesus said unto them, Let us go into a desert place, and do you rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. 32 And they getting up into a ship departed into a desert place privately. 33 And they saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran a foot thither out of all the cities, and came thither. 34 And Jesus when he came out, and saw a great multitude, was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things. 35 But after many hours, his disciples came and said unto him, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed: 36 Send them away, that they may go into the country hard by, and into the villages, that they may buy themselves somewhat to eat. 37 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Give ye them to eat. They say unto him, Shall we go and buy bread with two hundred denarii, and give them to eat? 38 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves of bread have ye? go, see. And when they knew, they say un-

to him, Five loaves, and two fishes. 39 And Jesus commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass. 40 And they sat down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties. 41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the five loaves, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all. 42 And they did all eat, and were filled. 43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. 44 And they that did eat, were five thousand men. 45 And straightway he arose and constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before him, unto Bethsaida, But he sent away the people. 46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray. 47 And when even was come, the ship was already in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. 48 And when he saw them toiling in rowing: for the wind was contrary to them about the fourth watch of the night, Jesus cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have pat- tered by them. 49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been an apparition, and they all cried out, 50 And were terrified, And he talked with them, and saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid. 51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in them- selves, and wondered. 52 For they minded not the loaves, for their heart was blinded. 53 And when they had passed over from thence, they came into the land of Genne- sar, 54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him, 55 And ran

through

## According to Mark:

through that whole region round about, and began to carry in couches there all that were ill, For they carryed them about wheresoever they heard Jesus was 56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were cured.

VII. And there came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. 2 And when they knew some of his disciples did eat the loaves with common, that is to say with unwashen hands, they condemned them. 3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash hands often, eat not bread, holding the tradition of the elders. 4 And when they come from the market, except they wash they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to observe; the washing of cups and pots, brasen vessels, and of beds. 5 And the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with common hands? 6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites; And he said, This people loveth me with *their* lips, but their heart hath departed far from me: 7 But in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines, the commandments of men: 8 As the washing of pots and cups: and many other things ye do that are like *them*; leaving the command of God, ye hold the tradition of men. 9 And he said unto them, Well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may confirm your own tradition: 10 For Mo-

ses said Honour thy father and mother: and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death. 11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father, or mother, *It is Corban*, that is, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightst be profited by me; 12 Ye suffer him not to do ought for his father or mother: 13 Making the word of God of none effect through your foolish tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. 14 And when he had called the multitude again unto him, he said unto them, Hear me every one of you, and mind 15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of a man, those are they that defile the man. 16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. 17 And when he was entered into the house from the multitude, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. 18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him? 19 Because it entereth not into the heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, *and* purgeth all meats? 20 And they said, who cometh out of the man, those things defile the man. 21 For from within, out of the heart of man proceed evil reasonings, fornications, thefts, adulteries, murder, 22 Covetousness, deceit, wickedness, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: 23 All these wicked things come from within, and defile the man. 24 And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre, and entered into an house, and would have no one know *it*; and he could not be hid. 25 But a certain woman as soon as she heard of him, whose young



## According to Mark.

young daughter had an unclean spirit, and came and fell at his feet :  
 26 The woman was a Greek, a Phenician by nation, and she asked him that he would cast forth the dæmon out of her daughter. 27 And he saith unto her, Let the children first be filled : for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs. 28 And she answered and said unto him, *Yes, Lord* : yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crumbs. 29 And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way, the dæmon is gone out of thy daughter. 30 And when she was gone away to her house, she found her daughter laid upon the bed, and the dæmon gone out. 31 And again departing from the coasts of Tyre, he came by Sidon, unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis. 32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and he had an impediment in his speech : and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. 33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and he spit, and put his fingers into his ears, and touched his tongue. 34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphetha, that is, Be opened. 35 And his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. 36 And he charged them that they should tell no body any thing : but what he charged them, so much the more did these people publish it. 37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well : he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

VIII. In those days the multitude being again great, and they having nothing to eat, he called the disciples unto him, and saith unto them, *I have compassion*

on this multitude, because they have now been here three days, and have nothing to eat : 3 And I would not send them away fasting to their own houses, lest they faint by the way : because that some of them came from far. 4 And his disciples answered him, Whence can one satiate these men with bread in the wilderness? 5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven. 6 And he commands the multitude to sit down on the ground : and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to distribute *them* : and they did distribute them to the multitude. 7 And they had a few small fishes : and when he had given thanks he said, and commanded to set those to be distributed. 8 And they did eat, and were filled : and they took up of the surplus of the fragments seven baskets. 9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand, and he sent them away. 10 And he himself entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Magedan. 11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him. 12 And he sighed deeply in spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given to this generation. 13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side. 14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, they had in the ship with them only one loaf. 15 And he charged them, saying, Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and the leaven of Herod. 16 And they reasoned among themselves, *It is because they had no leaven.* 17 And when Jesus knew *it*, he saith unto them, Why reason

## According to Mark.

son ye in your hearts, because ye have no loaves of bread? perceive ye not yet, neither mind your heart is blinded? 18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? neither do ye remember? 19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. 20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? and they said, Seven. 21 And he saith unto them, How is it that ye do not yet mind? 22 And they come to Bethany, and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. 23 And he took the blind mans hand, and led him out of the village, and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asketh him, If thou seest ought. 24 And he looketh up, and saith, I see men as trees walking. 25 After that, he put hands again upon his eyes, and he began to look up: and he was restored, so as to see all things clearly. 26 And he sent him away to his house; and he said unto him, Go unto thine house, and tell it not to any one in the village. 27 And Jesus went out, and his disciples, unto Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I am? 28 And they answered, him saying, John the Baptist: but others, Elias; and others, As One of the prophets. 29 And he himself asked them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answered and said unto him, Thou art the Christ. 30 And he charged them that they should tell no one about him. 31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the Jews, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and the Gentiles, and after three days rise again. 32 And he spake that saying publickly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. 33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan for thou perceivest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men. 34 And when he had called the multitude unto him, with his disciples, he said, Whosoever will follow me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose it for the gospels sake, the same shall save it. 36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? 37 For what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? 38 But Whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

IX. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here with me, who shall not taste of death, till they shall see the kingdom of God come with power. 2 And after six days, Jesus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them. 3 And his raiments became shining, exceeding white as snow; such as no one upon earth can so white them. 4 And Elias appeared unto them with Moses: and talked with Jesus. 5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and wilt thou that I make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for

## According to Mark.

Moses, and one for Elias? 6 For he knew not what he should say, for they were fore afraid. 7 And there was a cloud overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him. 8 And presently when they had looked round about, they saw no one any more, save Jesus only with themselves. 9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no one what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead. 10 But they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what it was when he should rise from the dead? 11 And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes, Elias must first come? 12 And he answered and said to them, If Elias cometh first, he will restore all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. 13 I say unto you, that Elias is come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they would, as it is written of him. 14 And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude with them, and the scribes questioning with them. 15 And straightway all the multitude, when they beheld Jesus, were greatly amazed, and rejoicing, saluted him. 16 And he asked them, What question ye among yourselves? 17 And one of the multitude answered him; Master, I have brought unto thee my son, who hath a dumb Spirit: 18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he dasheth him against the ground; and he foameth, and gnasheth his teeth, and withereth away: and I said to thy disciples, that they should call him out, and they could not call him out. 19 And he answered them, and saith, O unbelieving generation, how long shall I be with you? how long must I suffer you? bring him unto me. 20 And they brought him: and when he saw him, the spirit disturbed him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming. 21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, from a Child. 22 And oft-times it casteth him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him; but if thou canst do any thing, O Lord, have compassion on us, and help us. 23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth. 24 And straightway the father of the child cries out, and says with tears, I believe; help thou mine unbelief. 25 And when Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, Come out of him, and enter no more into him. 26 And it cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him; and he was as dead, inasmuch that many said, He is dead. 27 But Jesus took hold of his hand, and lifted him up, and he arose. 28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast it out? 29 And he said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting. 30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it. 31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after three days he shall rise again. 32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him. 33 And they came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them,

## According to Mark.

them, What was it that ye disputed by the way? 34 But they held their peace: for they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest. 35 Then he sat down, and called *them*; 36 And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them, 37 Whosoever shall receive such child in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me. 38 John answered him and said, Master, we saw one casting out demons in thy name, who followeth not with us; and we forbid *him*. 39 But he answered and said, Do not ye forbid him: for there is no one who shall do a miracle in my name, that can soon speak evil of me. 40 For he that is not against us, is on our part. 41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye are Christs, verily I say unto you, that he shall not lose his reward. 42 And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that have faith, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged upon his neck, and he were cast into the sea. 43 And if thy hand scandalize thee, cut it off; it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands, to be cast into gehenna, where is the unquenchable fire. 44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 45 And if thy foot scandalize thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into eternal life, than having two feet, to be cast into gehenna, into the fire that never shall be quenched. 46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 47 And if thine eye scandalize thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the Kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to go away into gehenna: 48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. 49 For every sacrifice shall be salted with salt, 50 Salt is good: but if the salt shall have lost its saltiness, wherewith shall it be seasoned? Have salt in your selves, and be at peace one with another.

X. And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan: and the multitude came together unto him again; as they were wont; and he taught them again. 2 And the Pharisees asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him. 3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? 4 And they said, Moses suffered to give, to write a bill of divorce, and to put *her* away. 5. And Jesus answered and said, For the hardness of your heart, Moses wrote this precept. 6 But from the beginning, God made male and female. 7 And he said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife: 8 And they two shall be one flesh: so then they are no longer two, but one flesh. 9 What God hath joined, let not man put asunder. 10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same word. 11 And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. 12 And if a woman shall depart from her husband, and marry another, she committeth adultery. 13 And they brought young children to him that he should touch them; and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*. 14 But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer very little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such

## According to Mark.

is the kingdom of God. 15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter thereinto. 16 And he called them to him, and put his hands upon them, and blessed them. 17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? 18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is none good, but one, that is God.* 19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not commit fornication, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour father and mother. 20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. 21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go away, sell what thou hast, and give to the poor; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. 22 And he was sad at the saying, and went away grieved: for he had much wealth. 23 And Jesus looked round about, and said unto the disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! 24 A camel may sooner go through the eye of a needle, than a rich man enter into the kingdom of God. 25 And his disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God! 26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? 27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God. 28 And Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all and have followed thee. 29 And Jesus answered, Verily I say unto you, there is no one that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake, or for the sake of the gospel, 30 But he shall receive an hundred-fold in this time: But he that hath left house, and sisters, and brethren, and mother, and children, and lands, with persecution; in the world to come, shall receive eternal life. 31 But many first, shall be last: and the last, first. 32 And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went with them; and they were amazed. And he took again the twelve, and began to say what things should happen unto him, 33 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes: and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the gentiles; 34 And they shall mock him, and shall spit upon him, and after three days he shall rise again. 35 And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him, and say unto him, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall ask thee. 36 But he saith unto them, What is it that I should do for you? 37 And they said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left hand, in thy glory. 38 But Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of; or be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? 39 And they said, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that

## According to Mark.

that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized : 40 But to sit on my right hand or left hand, is not mine to give, but to them for whom it is prepared. 41 When the other ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John. 42 And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they who are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise Lordship over them also ; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. 43 But so it is not among you : but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister : 44 And whosoever of you will be the chief, shall be your servant. 45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. 46 And he cometh to Jericho : and as he went out thence with his disciples, and a great multitude, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat begging by the way-side. 47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me. 48 And many threatened him that he should hold his peace : but he cried the more a great deal, Thou son of David have mercy on me. 49 And Jesus stood still, and bid him be called : and they say to the blind man, Be of good comfort, rise ; he calleth thee. 50 And he cast away his garment, leaped up, and came to him. 51 And Jesus answered, and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ? The blind man said unto him, O Lord, Rabbi, that I might receive my sight. 52 And Jesus said unto him, Go away ; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed him in the way. XL And when he came nigh to Jerusalem, and unto Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples ; 2 And said unto them, Go away into the village over against you, and as soon as ye be entered, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat ; loose, and bring him. 3 And if any one say unto you, Why do you loose the colt ? say ye, that the Lord hath need of him ; and straightway he sends him again. 4 And they went away and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met : and they loose him. 5 And some of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt ? 6 And they said, even as Jesus had said to them : and they let them go. 7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and they cast his garments on him ; and he sat upon him. 8 And many spread their garments in the way ; and others cut down branches off the trees, and strowed in the way. 9 And they that went along, and they that followed, cried, saying, Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord : 10 And blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh : Hosanna in the highest. 11 And he entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple ; And when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the hour of evening was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve disciples. 12 And on the morrow as they came from Bethany, he was hungry. 13 And seeing a fig-tree from far, having leaves, he came, to see if there were any thing thereon, and he found nothing but leaves ; for the time of figs was not yet. 14 Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard. 15 And they entered into Jerusalem : and when Jesus was

## According to Mark.

was in the temple he began to cast out thence those that sold and bought in the temple, and the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves, 16 And would not suffer that any one should carry a vessel through the temple. 17 And he taught, saying unto them, It is written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves. 18 And the scribes and chief priests heard, and sought how they might destroy him; for they feared him, because all the multitude was astonished at his doctrine. 19 And when even was come, he went out of the city. 20 And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. 21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away. 22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, If ye had the faith of God, 23 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but what he saith shall come to pass, he shall have whatsoever he saith. 24 Therefore I say unto you, What things ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye shall receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*. 25 And when ye stand, praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: and your Father also, who is in heaven will forgive you *your* trespasses. 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father who is in heaven, forgive your trespasses. 27 And he cometh again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and elders of the people, 28 And say unto him, By what authority dost thou these things? Who gave thee this authority to do these things? 29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one word, answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. 30 The baptism of John, was it from the heavens, or of men? answer me, 31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, What shall we say? If we shall say, From heaven, he will say to us, Why then did ye not believe him? 32 If we shall say, Of men, we fear the people: for all men knew John, that he was a prophet indeed. 33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We know not. But Jesus answering saith unto him, [them] Neither do I say to you by what authority I do these things.

XII. And he began to speak unto them by parables. A man planted a vineyard, and let an hedge about it, and digged the wine-fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country. 2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that they might give him of the fruit of the vineyard. 3 And they caught *him*, and beat *him*, and sent *him* away empty to him. 4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and they beheaded him, and exposed him to contempt, 5 And he sent another servant; and him they killed: and many others, bearing some, but killing others. 6 Having yet therefore one son, the well-beloved, he sent him also last of all, saying, They will reverence my son. 7 But the husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. 8 And they took, and killed *him*, and cast him out of the vineyard. 9 What will therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give

## According to Mark:

give the vineyard unto others. 10 And have ye not read this scripture? The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner. 11 This was from the Lord, and is marvellous in our eyes. 12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the multitude, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went away. 13 And they send certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to entangle him in his words. 14 And the Pharisees asked him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Tell us, Is it lawful to give capitation money to Cesar, or not? 15 But Jesus seeing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a denarius that I may see it. 16 And they brought it: and he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? and they said unto him, Cessars. 17 But Jesus answering said, Render to Cesar the things that are Cessars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him. 18 Then come unto him the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying. 19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and hath a wife, and leave no children, that his brother shall take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 20 There were therefore seven brethren among you: and the first took a wife, and died, and left no seed. 21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: 22 And in like manner the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also. 23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife. 24 But Jesus answering, said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither know ye the power of God? 25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels who are in the heavens. 26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? 27 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living: ye therefore do greatly err. 28 And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and seeing that he had answered them well, asked him, saying, Master, Which is the first commandment? 29 But Jesus answered him, and said, The first of all is, Hear, Israel, The Lord our God is one Lord; 30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. 31 But the second is like to this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandment greater than these. 32 And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none but he. 33 And to love him with all thy heart, and with all thy power, and with all thy soul, and to love thy neighbour as thy self, is more than whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. 34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man durst ask him any question. 35 And Jesus answered, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?



## According to Mark.

vid? 36 David himself says, by the Holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I shall put thine enemies beneath thy feet. 37 David himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he his son? And the multitude was great, and heard him gladly. 38 But he said unto them as he was teaching, Beware of the scribes, and publicans, who delight to go in long clothing, and to be saluted in the markets. 39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost seats at feasts: 40 They devour widows houses, and on the pretence of orphans make long prayers: these shall receive far greater judgement. 41 And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the multitude cast in much. 42 But there came one widow, and she threw in two mites, which are a farthing. 43 And Jesus called unto him his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in than all they who have cast into the treasury. 44 For all these did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, all her living.

XIII. And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what stones, and what build- ings of the temple are these. 2 And Jesus answering said unto them, See you these great buildings? Verily I say unto you, that there shall not be left one stone upon another here, that shall not be thrown down; and in three days another shall be raised without hands. 3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him by himself, 4 Tell us when these things shall be, and what the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled? 5 And Jesus answering, began to say unto them, Take heed lest any one deceive you. 6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am he: and shall deceive many. 7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not disturbed: for that must needs be; but the end shall not be yet. 8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and famines: these are the beginning of sorrows. 9 Afterward they shall deliver you your selves up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be set before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony to them. 10 And the gospel must first be preached unto all nations. 11 And when they shall lead, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak; but whatsoever shall be given you in that Hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. 12 And the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against parents, and shall put them to death. 13 And ye shall be hated of all for my name: but he that endures unto the end, the same shall be saved. 14 But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, standing where it ought not, let him that readeth, mind what he readeth, then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains: 15 And let him that is on the house-top, not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house. 16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back to take up his garment. 17 Wo to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days. 18 And pray

## According to Mark.

ye that [these things] be not in the winter. 19 For those days shall be afflictions, such as have not been from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, and may this not be again. 20 And except that the Lord had shortened those days, for his elects sake, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days. 21 And then, if any one shall say, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, there: believe it not. 22 For false prophets shall arise, and shall make signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, the elect. 23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. 24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light: 25 And the stars of heaven shall be falling, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken. 26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming upon the clouds; with great power and glory. 27 And then shall he send the angels, and shall gather together the elect from the four winds, from the uttermost parts of the earth, to the uttermost parts of heaven. 28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves of itself, ye know that summer is already near: 29 So ye likewise, when ye shall see all these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, at the doors. 30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done. 31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. 32 But of that day or hour knoweth no one, no not the angels who are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. 33 Take ye heed therefore, watch: for ye know not when the time is. 34 As a

man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. 35 Watch ye therefore, for ye know not when the master of the house cometh; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning; 36 Lest coming out suddenly, he find you sleeping. 37 And what I say unto you is, Watch.

XIV. After two days was the passover: and the chief priests, and the scribes sought how they might take him, and put him to death. 2 But they said, Lest there be on the feast an uprore of the people. 3 And Jesus being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabastrer-box of ointment; and she brake the alabastrer-box, and poured it on his head. 4 But his disciples had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment? 5 This ointment might have been sold for more than three hundred denarii, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured at her. 6 And Jesus said unto them, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work in me. 7 For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always. 8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying. 9 But verily I say unto you, Wheresoever the gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, what she also hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her. 10 And Judas Scarioth, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him. 11 And they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently

## According to Mark.

ly betray him: 12 And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the paslover, the disciples say unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare for thee, that thou mayest eat the paslover? 13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, saying, Go ye into the city, and a man bearing a pitcher of water shall meet you: follow him. 14 And whosoever he shall go in, say ye to the master of the house, The master saith, Where is my guest-chamber, where I shall eat the paslover with my disciples? 15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: and there make ready for us. 16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and did as he had said unto them: and they made ready the paslover. 17 But in the evening he cometh with the twelve. 18 And as they sat and did eat, Jesus saith, Verily I say unto you, one of you who eateth with me, will betray me. 19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another, Is it I? 20 And he saith unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish. 21 The Son of man indeed is betrayed, as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom he is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had not been born. 22 And as they did eat, he took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to them, and said, Take *it*: this is my body. 23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave *it* to them: and they all drank of it. 24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the covenant, which is shed for many. 25 Verily I say unto you; I will not drink any more of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I shall drink it new in the kingdom of God. 26

And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. 27 Then Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. 28 But after I am risen, I will go before you unto Galilee. 29 But Peter saith unto him, If all shall be offended, yet *will* not I be offended. 30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night, before the cock crow thou wilt deny me thrice. 31 But he said, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise said they all. 32 And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith to them, Sit ye here, while I shall pray. 33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be fore amazed, and to be very heavy. 34 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch. 35 And he proceeded a little, and fell on his face, and prayed, that if it were possible this hour might pass from him. 36 And he said, Abba, Father, All things *are* possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt. 37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not ye watch one hour? 38 Watch ye and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit truly *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak. 39 And again he went away, and prayed. 40 And when he came, he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy: neither knew they what to answer him. 41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on, and take your rest: the end is very near, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed *in*

## According to Mark.

into the hands of sinners. 42 Rise up, let us go : lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand. 43 And while he yet spake, cometh Judas Scarioth, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. 44 And he that betrayed him, had given a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, is he, lay hold of him, and lead him away safely. 45 And he came to him, and saith, Rabbi, and kissed him. 46 And they laid their hands on him, and seized him. 47 And one of them drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. 48 And he said unto them, Are ye come out against a thief, with swords and staves, to take me? 49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye seized me not : but that the scriptures may be fulfilled. 50 And they all forsook him and fled. 51 But a certain young man followed them, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and they laid hold on him. 52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked. 53 And they led Jesus away to the high priest; and all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes came together to him. 54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest; and he sat with the servants, warming himself at the fire. 55 And the chief priests and the whole council sought for witness against Jesus that they might put him to death; and found none. 56 For many bare false witness and spake against him, but their testimony did not agree. 57 And others arose, and bare false witness against him, saying, 58 We heard him say, I will destroy the temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will raise up another made without hands. 59 But neither to did their testimony agree. 60 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee? 61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. The high priest said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? 62 But Jesus answered and saith to him, I am : and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, with the clouds of heaven. 63 But the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need have we any farther of witnesses? 64 Ye have heard his blasphemy : what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. 65 And some began to spit on his face, and they buffeted him, and said unto him, Prophesie : and they struck him with the palms of their hands. 66 And as Peter was in the palace, there cometh to him one of the maids of the high priest. 67 And seeing Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, Thou wast with Jesus of Nazareth. 68 But he denied, saying, I neither know nor understand what thou sayst. He went out into the porch; and the cock crew. 69 And the maid seeing him again, he denied again, and she began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. 70 And a little after, they that stood by said again, Surely thou art one of them : for thou art a Galilean. 71 But he began to curse, and to say, I know not the man of whom ye speak. 72 And presently the cock crew the second time. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said. And when he thought thereon, he began to weep.

XV. And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and

## According to Mark:

and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and led him away into the hall, and delivered him to Pilate. 2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering saith unto him, Thou sayst it. 3 And the chief priests accused him of many things. 4 And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they accuse thee of. 5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled. 6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner whomsoever they required. 7 And there was one named Barabbas, who lay bound with them that had made an insurrection, who had committed murder in the insurrection. 8 And the whole multitude got up, and began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them. 9 But Pilate answered and saith to them, Will ye that I release the king of the Jews? 10 For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy. 11 But the chief priests persuaded the multitude that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. 12 And Pilate answered, and said unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto the king of the Jews? 13 And they cried out again, saying, Crucifie him. 14 Then Pilate said unto them, What evil hath he then done? And they cried out exceedingly, Crucifie him. 15 And Pilate released Barabbas unto them, but he scourged him, and delivered Jesus to be crucified. 16 And the soldiers led him away into the hall, which is the Pretorium; and they call the whole band. 17 And they put him on purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it upon him. 18 And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews. 19 And they smote his head with a reed, and spit upon him. 20 And when they had taken off the purple from him, they put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him. 21 And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who was passing by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross. 22 And they led him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull. 23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrh: and he received it not. 24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, and cast a lot upon them, what every one should take. 25 And it was the third hour, and they guarded him. 26 But the superscription of his accusation was written over, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS. 27 And with him were crucified two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on the left. 29 And they that passed by, blasphemed him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days! 30 Save thy self, and come down from the cross. 31 But the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save. 32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe him. And they that were crucified with him, reproached him. 33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole earth, until the ninth hour. 34 And at the ninth hour Jesus called with a loud voice, *Eloi, Eloi, Lama Zaphthani?* which is, being interpreted, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* [† reproach- ed me. Gr.] And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elias. 36 And one ran and filled a sponge

## According to Mark.

a sponge with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone: let us see whether Elias will come to take him down. 37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost. 38 And the vail of the temple was rent into two parts, from the top to the bottom. 39 And when the centurion who stood there over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God. 40 There were women looking from afar: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joseph, and Salome; 41 Who also when he was in Galilee, followed him: and many other women who came up with him unto Jerusalem. 42 And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath. 43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, who also expected the kingdom of God, came, and went boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. 44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he were already dead. 45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. 46 Now Joseph had bought fine linen, and he took him, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre, and departed. 47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, beheld the place where he was laid;

XVI. And they went and bought sweet spices, that they might anoint him. 1 And early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre, at the rising of the sun. 2 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll away the stone from the door of

the sepulchre? for it was very great. 4 And they come and find the stone rolled away. 5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted. 6 And the Angel saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold his place where they laid him. 7 But go and tell his disciples and Peter, that so I go before you into Galilee: there shall ye see me, as I said unto you. 8 And they went out, and fled from the sepulchre; for fear and an ecstasy seized upon them, and they were amazed: they said nothing to any one; for they were afraid.

9 **N**OW when he was risen early, the first day of the week, he made himself known first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven demons. 10 She went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept. 11 And they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, and they did not believe him. 12 And after, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country. 13 And they went away and told it unto the rest, neither believed they them. 14 But afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them who had seen him after he was risen. 15 And he said unto them, Go ye into the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. 16 For he that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be condemned. 17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall

## The Acts of the Apostles.

shall they cast out dæmons: they shall speak with new tongues. 18 And they shall take up serpents in their hands, and if they drink any deadly thing it shall not at all hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. 19 So then after the

Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. 20 And they went forth and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

## The ACTS of the Apostles.

### CHAP. I.

**T**HE former Treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach. 2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost, had given commandment to preach the Gospel unto the apostles, whom he had chosen. 3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: 4 And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard by my mouth. 5 For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost, which ye shall receive not many days hence. 6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him saying, Lord, dost thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? 7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. 8 But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be my wit-

nesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth. 9 And when he had spoken these things, a cloud received him, and he was taken out of their sight. 10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven, as he was going, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; 11 And they said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing? This same Jesus who is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. 12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called the mount of Olives, which is near to Jerusalem, a sabbath-day's journey off. 13 And when they were come in, they went up into the upper room, where abode both Peter, John, and James, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon Zelotes, and Judas the Son of James. 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer, with the women, and children, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and his brethren. 15 But in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, for the multitude of the names together were about

## The Acts of the Apostles.

an hundred and twenty. 16 Men, brethren, this scripture must needs be fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, who was guide to them that took Jesus. 17 For he was numbered among us, and who obtained the lot of this ministry. 18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of his iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. 19 Which also was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in *their* tongue, Acedamach, that is to say, The field of blood. 20 For it is written in the book of psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no one dwell therein: and his office let another take. 21 Wherefore of these men who have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jesus Christ went in and out among us. 22 Beginning from the baptism of John, until the day that he was taken up from us, must one of these be appointed to be a witness with us of his resurrection. 23 And they set up two, Joseph, called Barnabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. 24 And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, who knowest the hearts of all men, shew which one thou hast chosen out of these two. 25 That he may take the place of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas fell, that he might go to his own place. 26 And they gave their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was admitted into the number of the twelve apostles.

II. And it came to pass in those days, that the day of Pentecost was fully come, and they

were all in one place. 2 And lo suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. 3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and they sat upon each of them: 4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. 5 *Now* there were dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. 6 And when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, and they heard every one speak in their *own* languages. 7 And they were amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these who speak, Galileans? 8 And how hear we every man in our tongue, wherein we were born? 9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, 10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt also, and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, 11 Cretes, and Arabians; we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God. 12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt one among another what had happened, and saying, What meaneth this? 13 Others mocked, saying, These are full of new wine. 14 Then Peter standing up with the ten Apostles, first lift up his voice, and said unto them thus, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: 15 For these are not drunken,

as



## The Acts of the Apostles.

as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. 16 But this is that which was spoken by the prophet. 17 It shall come to pass in the last days, saith the Lord, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and their sons and their daughters shall prophesy, and the young men shall see visions, and the old men shall dream dreams: 18 And on my servants, and on my handmaidens I will pour out of my Spirit: 19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; 20 The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great day of the Lord come. 21 And it shall come to pass, whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved. 22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles and wonders and signs, all which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves know: 23 Him, being given you by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by a wicked hand have fastned to a cross, and slain: 24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of Hades: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. 25 For David speaketh concerning him, I foresaw my Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved. 26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope, 27 That thou wilt not leave my soul in Hades, neither wilt thou deliver thine holy One to see corruption. 28 Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt

fill me with joy with thy countenance. 29 Men, brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us until this day: 30 Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his <sup>†</sup> heart, according to <sup>†</sup> read loins. the flesh, he would raise up Christ, and to place him on his throne. 31 He foreseeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that he was not left in Hades, neither his flesh did see corruption. 32 This Jesus therefore hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. 33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath poured out upon you this, which ye now both see and hear. 34 For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he said himself, The Lord saith unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 35 Until I make thy foes the footstool of thy feet. 36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ. 37 Then all they that were come together and had heard, were pricked in their heart, and some of them said to Peter, and to the apostles, Men, brethren, shew us what we shall do? 38 But Peter saith unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. 39 For the promise is ours, and to our children, and to all that are afar off, as many

## The Acts of the Apostles.

as the Lord our God shall call. 40 And with many other words did he testify and exhort them, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation. 41 Then they that believed his word, were baptized; and the same day there were added about three thousand souls. 42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles doctrine at Jerusalem, and communion, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. 43 And fear was upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. 44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common. 45 And as many as had possessions of goods, sold them, and parted them to all as every one had need. 46 And they all continued in the temple, and from house to house, and breaking bread, partook of meat with gladness and singleness of heart. 47 Praising God, and having favour with all the world. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

III. Now Peter and John went up in those days into the temple, at the evening ninth hour of prayer. 2 And lo a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple. 3 He fixing his eyes on them and seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms of them. 4 But Peter looking upon him, with John, said, Fix thine eyes on us. 5 And he fixed his eyes on them, expecting to receive something of them. 6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but what I

have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Walk. 7 And he took him by the right hand, and raised him up, and immediately he stood up, and his feet and ankle-bones received strength. 8 And he leaping up, stood, and walked, rejoicing, and entered with them into the temple, praising God. 9 And all the people saw him walking about and praising God. 10 And they knew him, that it was he who sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him. 11 And as Peter and John went out, he went out together with them, taking hold of them. But those that were amazed stood in the cloister called Solomon's. 12 But Peter answered and said unto them, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or piety we had done this? 13 The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus Christ, whom ye delivered up to Judgment, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined and willing to let him go. 14 But ye oppressed the holy one, and the just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you, 15 And killed the prince of life, whom God raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. 16 And through the faith of his name, hath his name strengthened this man, whom ye see, and know that the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all. 17 And now men and Brethren, know ye, that you indeed through

## The Acts of the Apostles.

through ignorance did a wicked thing, as also your rulers. 18 But what God before had shewed by the mouth of all the prophets, that his Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled. 19 Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come upon you, from the face of the Lord. 20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, who was before ordained for you. 21 Whom the heaven must receive, until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of his holy prophets. 22 Moses truly said unto our fathers, A prophet shall the Lord our God raise up unto you, of our brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. 23 And it shall come to pass, every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. 24 All the prophets also from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise spoken of these days. 25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed. 26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Son, sent him forth to bless you, in turning away every one from your iniquities.

IV. And as they spake these words unto the people, the priests, and the Sadducees came. 2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached Jesus in the resurrection of the dead. 3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now evening. 4 But many of them

which heard the word, believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand. 5 And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes, 6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiphas, and Jonathan, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem. 7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this? 8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, 9 If we this day be examined by you of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; 10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. 11 This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. 12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given to men whereby we must be saved. 13 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned men, they marvelled, but they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus. 14 And beholding the man who had been healed standing with them, they could neither do nor say any thing against it. 15 When they had commanded them to be carried away out of the council, they conferred among themselves. 16 Saying, What shall we do to these men?

for

## The Acts of the Apostles.

for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them *is* more manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny *it*. 17 But that it spread no further among the people, we will therefore threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name. 18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus. 19 But Peter answering with John, said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more than unto God, Judge ye. 20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard. 21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, not finding a cause why they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done. 22 For the man was above forty years old, on whom the miracle of healing was shewed. 23 But the Apostles being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them. 24 And when they heard that, and acknowledged the power of God, they lift up *their* voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou *art* God who hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are: 25 Who by the Holy Spirit, by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? 26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. 27 For of a truth in this city against thy holy Son Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod,

and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together, 28 To do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done. 29 And now, Lord, behold their threatnings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word, 30 By stretching forth *thine* hand to heal: and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy Son Jesus. 31 And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness to every one that would believe. 32 And the multitude of them that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither was there any difference among them: neither said any that ought of the things which he possessed, was his own, but they had all things common. 33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ: and great grace was upon them all. 34 And no one among them wanted: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses: sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, 35 And laid *them* down at the apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every one according as he had need. 36 And Joseph, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation) of the Country of Cyprus, a Levite. 37 Having land, sold *it*, and brought the money, and laid *it* at the apostles feet.

V. But

## The Acts of the Apostles.

V. But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, 2 And kept back *part* of the price, the wife also being privy; and brought a certain part, and laid *it* at the apostles feet. 3 But Peter said unto Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and for thee to keep back *part* of the price of the land? 4 While it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in *thine own* power? why hast thou conceived to do this wicked thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God. 5 And when Ananias heard these words, he fell down immediately and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard *it*. 6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried *him* out, and buried *him*. 7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. 8 But Peter said unto her, I will ask thee then, whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yes, for so much. 9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them who have buried thy husband *are* at the door, and shall carry thee out. 10 And she fell down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying *her* forth, when he was made ready, buried *her* by her husband. 11 And great fear came upon the whole church, and upon as many as heard these things. 12 And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders wrought among the people; and they were all with one

accord in the temple, in Solomon's cloister. 13 And of the rest durst no one join himself to them: but the people magnified them. 14 And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women. 15 Inasmuch that they brought forth their sick into the streets, and laid *them* on beds and couches, that when Peter came, the shadow passing by, might overshadow some of them: for they were freed from every infirmity which every one had. 16 There came also a multitude *out* of the cities together round about unto Jerusalem, bringing the sick, and them who were vexed with unclean spirits: who were all healed. 17 Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, which is the sect of the Sadducees, and were filled with indignation, 18 And laid hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison. 19 Then by night the angel of the Lord opened the prison-doors, and brought them forth, and said, 20 Go, stand, and speak in the temple, all the words of this life. 21 And when they heard *that*, they entered into the temple early, and taught. But the high priest arose in the morning, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought. 22 But when the officers came, and had opened the prison, and found them not within, they returned, and told, 23 Saying, The prison found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing at the doors: but when we had opened, we found no one within. 24 Now when the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard

## The Acts of the Apostles.

heard these sayings, they doubted of them whereunto it would grow. 25 Then came one and told them, Behold, the men whom ye put into prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people. 26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them with violence : fearing the people, lest they should have been stoned. 27 And when they had brought them, they set *them* in the council : and the Priest asked them, 28 Saying, Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this name ? Behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and will bring that man's blood upon us. 29 *Then Peter and the apostles answered and said,* We ought to obey God rather than men. 30 But Peter said unto them, The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree. 31 Him hath God exalted in glory, a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins in him. 32 And *we are his* witnesses of these things ; and also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him. 33 When they heard *that*, they were cut, and took counsel to slay them. 34 Then stood there up one of the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little while. 35 And said unto the rulers, and the members of the council, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye are about to do as to these men. 36 For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be a great man, and to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves :

who came to nought of himself, and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. 37 After him rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him : he also perished, and as many as obeyed him, were dispersed. 38 And now, Brethren, I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone, without defiling your hands : for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought : 39 But if it be of God, ye will not be able to overthrow them ; neither you, nor kings, nor tyrants. Abstain therefore from these men ; lest haply ye be found to be fighters against God. 40 And to him they submitted : and when they had called the apostles, and beaten *them*, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. 41 The apostles therefore departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for *his* name. 42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach the Lord Jesus Christ.

VI. And in these days when the disciples were multiplied, there was a murmuring of the Hellenists against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration, in the ministration of the Hebrews. 2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said unto them, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. 3 What is it therefore, brethren ? Look ye out from among your selves seven men, attested to be full of the Spirit, and wisdom, whom we may appoint over

## The Acts of the Apostles.

over this business. 4 But we will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. 5 And this saying pleased the whole multitude of the disciples; and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a profelyte of Antioch. 6 These were set also before the apostles: who when they had prayed, laid *their* hands on them. 7 And the word of the Lord increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith. 8 And Stephen full of grace and power, did great wonders and miracles by the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. 9 Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, disputing with Stephen. 10 Who could not resist the wisdom that was in him, and the Holy Spirit by which he spake, because they were reprov'd by him with all boldness; not being therefore able to oppose the truth. 11 They suborned men who said, We have heard him speak blasphemies against Moses, and God. 12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon *him*, and caught him, and brought *him* to the council. 13 And set up false witnesses against him, who said, This Man ceaseth not to speak words against the holy place, and the law. 14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place, and will change the customs which Moses deliv-

red us. 15 And all that sat in the council, looked stedfastly on him, and saw his face, as if it had been the face of an angel standing in the midst of them.

VII. Then said the high priest, to Stephen, Is then this thing so? 2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers hear, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraam, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charan. 3 And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. 4 Then Abraam came out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charan: and he was there; and when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye also do now dwell; and our fathers who were before us. 5 And he gave him no inheritance in it, no not to set his foot on: But he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when he had no child. 6 And God spake thus to him, that his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat *them* evil four hundred years. 7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place. 8 And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so he begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: and Isaac Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs. 9 And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him. 10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt;

T

Egypt;

## The Acts of the Apostles.

Egypt; and he made him governor over Egypt, and all his house. 11 Now there came a famine over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction; and our fathers found no sustenance. 12 When therefore Jacob heard that there were provisions in Egypt, he sent out our fathers the first time, 13 And at the second Joseph was made known to his brethren; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh. 14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, seventy five: 15 † And Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, both he and our fathers, 16 And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraam bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor of Sychem. 17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had promised to Abraam, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt, 18 Till another king arose, which did not remember Joseph. 19 The same dealt also deceitfully with our kindred, and evil-entreated *our* fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live. 20 In which time Moses was born, and was fair to God, and nourished up in his fathers house three months: 21 And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished *him* for *her* son, 22 And Moses was educated in all

the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in his words and in deeds. 23 And when he was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel. 24 And seeing one of *them* suffer wrong by one of that country, he defended *him*, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian, and hid him in the sand. 25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not. 26 And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they fought, and saw them injured, and *would have* made peace between them, saying, what do ye, Men and brethren; why do ye injure one another? 27 But he that injured his neighbour, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us? 28 Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday? 29 And Moses fled at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons. 30 And afterwards when his forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord, in a flame of fire of a bush. 31 When Moses saw *it*, he wondered at the sight: and as he drew near to behold, the Lord spake unto him, saying, 32 *I am* the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraam, and the God of Isaac, and

---

† Read the text thus, from the *Old Testament History*. *Josh.* xxiv. 32. *Test. Sym.* §. 8. *Test. Benj.* §. 12. Jacob died, He and our fathers: And they were laid in the sepulchre which Abraam bought for a sum of money, of Ephron, the son of Zohar, that lived at Mamre; and were translated to the sepulchre which Jacob bought, for a sum of money, of Emmor, that lived at Sychem.



## The Acts of the Apostles.

and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold. 33 And there came a voice to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place on which thou standest is holy ground. 34 For I have seen also, I have seen the affliction of the people who is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt. 35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us? the same did God send both a ruler and a deliverer, with the hand of an angel who appeared to him in the bush. 36 He brought them out, having done wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years. 37 This is that Moses who said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me. 38 This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the angel who spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us. 39 Because our fathers would not obey, but rejected him, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt, 40 Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for this Moses, who brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him. 41 And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands. 42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me

slain beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of forty years in the wilderness? 43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of the god Rempham, figures which ye made, to worship them: and I will carry you away into the Parts of Babylon. 44 Your fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen. 45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drove out before the face of your fathers, unto the days of David. 46 Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the house of Jacob. 47 But Solomon built him an house. 48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in places made with hands; as saith the prophet, 49 Heaven is my throne, and earth my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or of what kind is the place of my rest? 50 Hath not my hand made all these things? 51 Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in hearts and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as did also your fathers, so do ye. 52 Which of the prophets have not they persecuted? and they have slain those who shewed before of the coming of the just one, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers: 53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it. 54 When they had heard him, they were cut to the hearts, and they gnashed their teeth at him. 55 But Stephen being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly

## The Acts of the Apostles.

into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus the Lord standing on the right hand of God, 56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. 57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, 58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a certain young mans feet, called Saul. 59 And they stoned Stephen, invoking and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. 60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, saying, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep. And Saul was consenting unto his death.

VIII. And at that time there was a great persecution and affliction upon the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles, who tarried at Jerusalem. 2 And devout men carried Stephen, and made great lamentation over him. 3 And Saul made havock of the church, entring into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison. 4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went about preaching the word. 5 And Philip came to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. 6 But when all the multitudes with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing, and seeing the signs which he did, 7 Unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were

healed. 8 And there was great joy in that city. 9 But there was a certain man whose name was Simon, before in that city, who used magick, and distracted the nation of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one. 10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that power of God, which is called The Great. 11 And to him they gave heed, because that of long time he had distracted them with magical arts. 12 But when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women. 13 Then Simon himself also believed: and when he was baptized, he also continued with Philip, and beholding the miracles and signs which were done he was distracted. 14 Now when the apostles who were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John. 15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Ghost. 16 For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. 17 Then laid they hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. 18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands, the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money. 19 Beseeching him, and saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I also lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. 20 But Peter said unto him, The money go to perdition with thee, because thou hast thought that the free gift of

## The Acts of the Apostles.

of God may he purchased with money. 21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: thy heart is not right before God. 22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray the Lord, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. 23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and the bond of iniquity. 24 Then answered Simon and said unto them, I beseech you, Pray ye to God for me, that none of these evil things which ye have spoken to me come upon me: who did not leave off to weep greatly. 25 They therefore, when they had testified and spoken the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem: But they preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans. 26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert. 27 And he arose and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace, a certain queen of the Ethiopians, who was her treasurer, and had come to Jerusalem to worship, 28 Was returning and sitting in a chariot reading Esaias the prophet. 29 Then the spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thy self to this chariot. 30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest? 31 And he said, How can I, except some one should guide me? and he desired Philip that he would come up, and sit with him. 32 The place of the scripture which he read, was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so

opened he not his mouth: 33 In his humiliation his judgment was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth. 34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other. 35 Then Philip opened his mouth and began at the same scripture and preached unto him Jesus. 36 And as they went on the way, they came unto a certain water; and the Eunuch said, See water, what doth forbid me to be baptized? 37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayst. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. 38 And he commanded the chariot to stand: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. 39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing. 40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through, he preached in all the cities till he came to Cesarea.

IX. And Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest, 2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he should find any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem. 3 And as he journeyed he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shone round about him a light from heaven: 4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest

## The Acts of the Apostles.

secutest thou me? 5 Who said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: *It is hard for thee to kick against the goads.* 6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise and go into the city, and it shall be told thee there what thou must do. 7 And the men who journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man: 8 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw nothing, but they led him by the hand, and brought him to Damascus. 9 And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink. 10 And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord. 11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street, which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for *one* whose name is Saul, of Tarsus: for behold he prayeth. 12 And he hath seen a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hands on him, that he might receive his sight. 13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem: 14 And here he hath Authority from the chief priests, to bind all that call on thy name. 15 But the Lord said unto him, Go: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel. 16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake. 17 And Ananias went

away, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me, Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost. 18 And there fell from his eyes as it had been scales; and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized. 19 And when he had received meat he was strengthened. Then was he certain days with the disciples who were at Damascus. 20 And straightway he preached Jesus in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God. 21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he that made havock of them who called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests? 22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews who dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is the Christ. 23 And after many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him: 24 But their laying await was known of Saul: and they watched the gates also day and night to kill him. 25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket. 26 And when he was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple. 27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus. 28 And he was with

## The Acts of the Apostles.

with them coming in, and going out in Jerusalem. 29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Hellenists: but they went about to slay him. 30 When the brethren knew it, they brought him down to Cæsarea, and sent *him* forth to Tarsus. 31 Then had the church rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and was edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, was multiplied. 32 And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, he came down also to the saints who dwelt at Lydda. 33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, who had lain upon his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy. 34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, The Lord Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise and make thy bed. And he arose immediately. 35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord. 36 Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, who by interpretation is called Dorcas [a Doe] this woman was full of good works, and alms deeds which she did. 37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid in an upper room. 38 And so much as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and he disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring *him*, Do not thou delay to come to us. 39 Then Peter arose, and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper room, and all the widows stood round about him weeping, and

showing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them. 40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. 41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive. 42 And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord. 43 And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

X. There was a certain man in Cæsarea, named Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian, 2 Devout, and fearing God with all his house, giving many alms to the people, and praying to God alway. 3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius. 4 And steadfastly looking on him, and being much affrighted, he said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. 5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter: 6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do. 7 And when the angel who spake unto him, was departed, he called two of his household-servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually: 8 And when he had declared all things unto them, he sent them to Joppa. 9 On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up to the upper

## The Acts of the Apostles.

room to pray, about the sixth hour. 10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten : but while they made ready, he fell into a trance. 11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the four corners, and let down from heaven to the earth : 12 Wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts, and creeping things of the earth, and fowls of the air. 13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter ; kill and eat. 14 But Peter said, By no means, Lord ; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean. 15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, make not thou common. 16 This was done thrice : and the vessel was received up again into heaven. 17 Now when Peter was come to himself, he doubted what this vision which he had seen should mean ; And behold the men who were sent from Cornelius, had asked for Simon's house, and stood before the gate. 18 And called, and asked whether Simon who was surnamed Peter, lodged there. 19 While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said unto him, Behold, men seek thee. 20 But arise and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing : for I have sent them. 21 Then Peter went down to the men ; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek : What would ye have ? or What is the cause wherefore ye are come ? 22 They said unto him, One Cornelius a Centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee to his

house, and to hear words of thee. 23 Then Peter brought them in, and lodged them, and on the morrow he rose up and went out with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him. 24 But on the morrow after he entered into Cesarea : and Cornelius was waiting for them, and had called together his kinsmen and staid for his near friends. 25 But as Peter drew nigh to Cesarea, one of the servants ran before, and told that he was come. But Cornelius leaped up, and met him : and falling at his feet, worshipped him. 26 But Peter raised him up, saying, What doest thou ? I also am a man as thou art. 27 And as he talked with him, he both went in, and found many come together. 28 And he said unto them, Ye well know that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew, to join himself, or come to a man of another nation : but God hath shewed me, that I should call no man common or unclean. 29 Therefore came I without gain-saying, as soon as I was sent for by you : I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me. 30 And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour : At the ninth hour I was both praying in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing, 31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance before God. 32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter ; he lodges in the house of Simon a tanner, by the sea ; who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee. 33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, beseeching thee to come to us. But thou hast well done that thou art come quickly.

## The Acts of the Apostles.

quickly. Now lo we are all here present before thee, desiring to hear from thee the things that are commanded thee of God. 34 But Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons : 35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. 36 For the word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ ; he is Lord of all. 37 That you know, which was throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached ; 38 Jesus of Nazareth ; whom God anointed with the Holy Ghost, and with power : He went about doing good, and healing all that were brought into subjection by the devil : for God was with him. 39 And we are his witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem ; and they slew *him*, and hanged *him* on a tree : 40 Him God raised up the third day, and granted him to be made manifest : 41 Not to all the people, but to witnesses, chosen before of God, to us, who did eat and drink and converse with him after *he* arose from the dead forty days. 42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he who was ordained of God the judge of quick and dead. 43 To him witness all the prophets, that through his name whosoever believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins. 44 While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them who heard the word. 45 And they of the circumcision who believed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter ; because that

on the Gentiles also was poured out the free gift of the Holy Ghost. 46 For they heard them speaking with other tongues, and magnifying God. But Peter said, 47 Can any one forbid water, that these should not be baptized, who have received the Holy Ghost, as well as we ? 48 Then he commanded them to be baptized, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Then prayed they him to tarry with them certain days.

XI. But it was heard by the Apostles and brethren in Judea, that the Gentiles had also received the word of God. 2 Now Peter had a desire for a long time to go to Jerusalem. And when he had spoken to the brethren, and confirmed them, he spake largely, and taught them through the countries : who also came to them, and declared to them the grace of God. But those brethren who were of the circumcision contended with him, 3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them. 4 But Peter beginning, expounded it in order unto them, saying, 5 I was in the city of Joppa, praying ; and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descended, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners ; and it came even to me. 6 Upon the which when I stedfastly looked, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. 7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter ; kill and eat. 8 But I said, By no means, Lord : for what is common or unclean hath not at any time entered into my mouth. 9 But a voice came to me from heaven, What God hath cleansed, make not thou common. 10 And this

U

was

## The Acts of the Apostles.

was done three times : and all were drawn up again into heaven. 11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cefarea unto me. 12 And the spirit said to me, go with them. These six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house : 13 But he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, who stood and said unto him, Send to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter : 14 Who shall speak unto thee words, whereby thou shalt be saved, and all thy house. 15 And as I began to speak to them, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as also on us at the beginning. 16 And I remembered the word of the Lord, how he said, John indeed baptized with water ; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost. 17 Forasmuch then as he gave them the like free gift as unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could so far withstand God, as not to give those who have believed on him † the Holy Spirit ?

† Read Baptism. x. 47, 48.

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life. 19 Now they who were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose from Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only. 20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Hellenists preaching the Lord Jesus Christ. 21 But the hand of the Lord was with them : and a

great number believed, and turned unto the Lord. 22 But the report of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem : and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch. 23 Who when he came also and had seen the grace of God, rejoiced, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue with the Lord. 24 For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and of faith : and a great multitude was added unto the Lord. 25 But hearing that Saul was at Tarsus, he departed, seeking for him. 26 And when he had found him, he besought him to come to Antioch : who when they were come, assembled in the Church a whole Year, and taught a great multitude. And there it was that the disciples in Antioch were first called Christians. 27 And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. But there was great rejoicing. 28 And as we conversed together, one of them named Agabus, spake, signifying by the spirit, that there should be a great famine throughout all the world : which also came to pass under Claudius. 29 But the disciples, every man according to their ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren who dwelt in Judea. 30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

XII. Now at that time Herod the king laid his hands to afflict certain of the church in Judea. 2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword. 3 But because he saw this attempt of his upon the faithful people of the Jews, he proceeded further



## The Acts of the Apostles.

further, to take Peter also: Then were the days of unleavened bread. 4 When he had apprehended this man, he put him into prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep, intending after the Passover to bring him forth to the people. 5 Peter therefore was kept in prison; but great prayer was made with fervency of the church unto God for him. 6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains; But the keepers before the door kept the prison. 7 And behold, an angel of the Lord came upon Peter, and a light shined in the prison-house, and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands. 8 But the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and bind on thy sandals: and so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me. 9 And he went out and followed, and knew not that it was true which was done by the angel: for he thought he saw a vision. 10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth into the city; which opened to them of its own accord: and they went out, and descended the seven steps, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him. 11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know that the Lord hath surely sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews. 12 And when he had considered, he came to the house of Mary

the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together, praying. 13 And as Peter himself knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda. 14 And knowing Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, and ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate. 15 And *they said* unto her, thou art mad. But she strongly affirmed that it was even so. Then *they said* to her, Perhaps, it is his angel. 16 But he continued knocking: and opening and seeing him, they were astonished. 17 But he beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, he came in, and declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go, shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed and went into another place. 18 Now as soon as it was day, there was a stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. 19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that *they* should be slain. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and *there* abode. 20 For he was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but the people of both cities came with one accord to the King, and having made Blastus his chamberlain their friend, they desired peace; because their countries were nourished by the king's. 21 And upon a set day, Herod arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. 22 When he was reconciled to those of Tyre, The people gave a shout, *saying*, the voices are of a god, and not

## The Acts of the Apostles.

of a man. 23 And immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and coming down from his seat while he was alive he was eaten of worms, and in this manner gave up the ghost. 24 But the word of God grew and multiplied. 25 And Barnabas and Saul departed from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled the ministry, and took with them John whose surname was Mark.

XIII. Now there were in the the church that was at Antioch, prophets and teachers; among whom was Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, who had been brought up with Herod also the tetrarch, and Saul. 2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said. Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them. 3 And when they had all fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away. 4 But they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, came down unto Seleucia; from thence they sailed to Cyprus. 5 But when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of the Lord in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John ministering to them. 6 And when they had gone through the whole isle unto Paphos, they found a certain forcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, called by the name of Barjesus: 7 Who was with the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called together Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God. 8 But Hetoimas the forcerer, for so is his name by interpretation, withstood them, seeking to turn away the procon-

sul from the faith, because he very willingly heard them. 9 Then Saul who also is Paul filled with the Holy Ghost, looked earnestly at him, 10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all knavery, thou son of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the ways of the Lord which are right? 11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord *shall be* upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand. 12 But when the proconsul saw what was done, he wondered, and believed God, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord. 13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga of Pamphylia: and John departed from them, and returned to Jerusalem. 14 But when they had departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and sat down. 15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of wisdom, for exhortation to the people, say on. 16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with the hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, hearken. 17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they sojourned in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it. 18 And the time of forty years he nourished them, as does a nurse her child, in the wilderness. 19 And when he had destroyed seven nations

## The Acts of the Apostles.

nations in the land of Chanaan, he divided the land of the strangers by lot. 20 And he gave judges, until four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet. 21 And afterwards they asked a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, forty years: 22 And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king: to whom also he testified and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, who will do all that I will. 23 God therefore from his seed hath, according to *his* promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus: 24 When John had first preached before his coming, the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. 25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not *he*. But behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes of *his* feet I am not worthy to loose. 26 Men, Brethren, children of the family of Abraham, and whosoever among us feareth God, to us is the word of this salvation sent forth. 27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and her rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the scriptures of the prophets which are read every sabbath, even they have fulfilled *them* in condemning *him*. 28 And finding no cause of death in him, when they had judged him they delivered him to Pilate that he might be slain. 29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they desired Pilate to crucify him, and when they had obtained that, and had taken him down from the tree, they laid *him* in a sepulchre. 30 Whom God raised. 31 He was seen

many days of them who came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are till now his witnesses unto the people. 32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, the promise which was made unto our fathers. 33 For thus hath God fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus Christ again; as it is also written in the first psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession. 34 And that he raised him up from the dead, no more to return to corruption, he said thus, I will give you the sure mercies of David. 35 He saith also in another *psalm*, Thou wilt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption. 36 For David after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell asleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: 37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption. 38 Be it known unto you therefore, Men, Brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins. 39 By him therefore every one that believes is justified before God, from all things by repentance, from which we could not be justified by the law of Moses. 40 Beware therefore, lest that come, which is spoken of in the prophets. 41 Behold, ye despisers, both wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, which you will in no wise believe, though any one declare it unto you: and they held their peace. 42 And when they were gone out of the synagogue, they besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabb.

## The Acts of the Apostles.

sabbath. 43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious profelytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God. But it came to pass that the word of God went through all the city, 44 And the next sabbath-day came almost the whole city, together to hear Paul; and when he had spoken a great deal about the Lord, 45 And when the Jews saw the multitude, they were filled with envy, and contradicted those words which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. 46 But Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said unto them, The word of God was to be first spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of eternal life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. 47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, Behold I have set thee to be a light to the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. 48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and received the word of God: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed. 49 And the word of the Lord was published through out all the region. 50 But the Jews stirred up the devout honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised affliction and persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. 51 But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium. 52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

XIV. And it came to pass in Iconium, that he entred unto them, into the synagogue of the

Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks, believed.

2 But the heads of the Jews and the rulers of the synagogue brought on a persecution against the righteous, and made the minds of the Gentiles evil affected against the brethren: but the Lord gave them peace quickly.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, who gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands. 4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and some held with the Jews, and others with the apostles. 5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Jews, with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them, 6 They were ware of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the whole region that lieth round about: 7 And there they were preaching the gospel. And the whole multitude was moved at the doctrine. But Paul and Barnabas abode at Lystra. 8 And there sat a certain man, impotent in his feet, from his mother's womb, who never had walked. 9 The same heard Paul speak; being in fear: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, 10 Said with a loud voice, I say to thee, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, Stand up right on thy feet. And he presently [immediately] leaped and walked. 11 And when the multitude saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. 12 Now they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and

## The Acts of the Apostles.

and Paul, Mercury, because he was the chief speaker. 13 But the priests of Jupiter who were before the city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the multitude. 14 When Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ran out to the multitude, crying, 15 And speaking, Sirs, why do ye these things? we are men of like passions with you, and preach God unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, who made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein: 16 Who in the past generations suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. 17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave you rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness. 18 And saying these things they scarce restrained the multitude from sacrificing to them: 19 But while they stayed and taught, there came upon them certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who stirred up the people, and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead. 20 But as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city of Lystra: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe. 21 But when they preached the gospel to those in the city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium and Antioch, 22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation come into the kingdom of God. 23 And when they had ordained them elders in every

church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed. 24 But after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia. 25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia, and preached the Gospel to them. 26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled. 27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done to them, with their souls, and that he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles. 28 And they abode no small time with the disciples.

XV. And certain men who came down from Judea, taught the brethren, Except ye be circumcised, and walk after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. 2 But when Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, Paul said that they should abide so as they had believed, and said it with great assurance. But those that came from Jerusalem charged them, Paul and Barnabas and certain others, to go up to the Apostles and Elders to Jerusalem that a determination might be made by them concerning this question. 3 They then being brought on their way by the church, they passed through both Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren. 4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received honourably of the church, and of the apostles and of the elders, and they declared all things that God had done

## The Acts of the Apostles.

done with them. 5 But those that had charged them to go up to the elders rose up, saying, That certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, said, They ought to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keep the law of Moses. 6 And the apostles and elders came together to consider of this matter. 7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up by the spirit, and said unto them, Men, Brethren, ye know how that of ancient Days, God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. 8 But God, who knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving unto them the Holy Ghost, even as unto us: 9 And put no difference between us and them, having purified their hearts by faith. 10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we have been able to bear? 11 But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they. 12 But the Elders agreed to what Peter had said, and held their peace: and heard Barnabas and Paul, declaring what signs and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them. 13 And after they had held their peace, James arose up and said, Men, Brethren, hearken to me. 14 Symeon hath declared how God at the first hath visited the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. 15 And to this will agree the words of the prophets, as it is written, 16 After these things I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen

down: and I will build again, the ruins thereof, and I will erect it again. 17 That the residue of men might seek our God, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, faith the Lord, who will do these things. 18 Known unto the Lord is his work from the beginning of the world. 19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them who from among the Gentiles are turned to God; 20 But that we send unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and fornication, and blood. And what things they would not have done to themselves, do not ye to others: 21 For Moses of old hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath. 22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas; Judas named Barabbas, and Silas, leading men among the brethren: 23 And wrote a letter containing what follows. The apostles, and elders, and brethren, send greeting unto the brethren of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia. 24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, disturbing your souls; to whom we gave no commandment: 25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send out chosen men unto you, with your beloved Barnabas and Paul; 26 Men that have hazarded their lives to every temptation, for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. 27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell the same things by word.

28 For

## The Acts of the Apostles.

28 For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no other burden than these necessary things; 29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from fornication: And what things ye would not have done to your selves, not to do to another: from which if ye keep your selves ye shall do well, as moved by the Holy Spirit. Fare ye well. 30 So when they were dismissed, they came in a few days down to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle. 31 When they had read it they rejoiced for the consolation. 32 And Judas and Silas being prophets also themselves, full of the Holy Spirit: comforted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them. 33 And after they had tarried a space, they were dismissed in peace from the brethren unto those that sent them. 34 But it pleased Silas to abide with them. But Judas alone went. 35 Now Paul and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also. 36 And some days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us return and visit the brethren in every city among whom we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do. 37 But Barnabas had a mind to take with them John, whose surname was Mark. 38 But Paul was not willing, saying, he would not take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work for which they were sent. 39 But the contention was so sharp, that they departed asunder one from the other: Then Barnabas took Mark, and

failed to Cyprus. 40 And Paul took Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of the Lord. 41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches, and delivering the commands of the elders.

XVI. But when he had passed over these nations he came to Derbe and Lystra: and behold a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a woman who was a Jewess, and believed; but his father a Greek: 2 Who was attested to by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium. 3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him, because of the Jews who were in those places: for they knew all that his father was a Greek. 4 And as they went through the cities, they preached and delivered to them the Lord Jesus Christ with all boldness; and withal delivered the commands of the apostles and elders who were at Jerusalem. 5 And so were the churches established, and increased in number daily. 6 And they passed through Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to speak the word of God to any in Asia. 7 But when they were in Mysia, they desired to go to Bithynia: but the Spirit of Jesus suffered them not. 8 And they passing through Mysia came to Troas. 9 And one like a man of Macedonia appeared to Paul in a vision in the night, standing over against him, and prayed, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us. 10 When therefore he was risen he declared to us the vision, and we understood that the Lord had called us to preach the gospel unto

## The Acts of the Apostles.

unto those that were in Macedonia. 11 Now on the morrow, loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis; 12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the head of Macedonia, a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days. 13 But on the sabbath-day we went out of the gate by the river, where there appeared to be an house of prayer: and we sat down and spake unto the women who came along with us. 14 And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, who worshipped God, heard *us*: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken by Paul. 15 And when she was baptized, and all her household, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to God, come into my house and abide *there*. And she constrained us. 16 And it came to pass, as we went to the house of prayer, a certain damsel, possessed with a spirit of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by thus soothsaying: 17 She followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, These are the servants of the most high God, who preach unto you the way of salvation. 18 And this did she many days. But Paul turned to the spirit, and being grieved said, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out immediately. 19 But when the masters of the servant woman saw that they were deprived of the gains which they had by her, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew *them* into the court, unto the rulers, 20 And brought

them to the Captains, saying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city, 21 And teach customs which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to do, being Romans. 22 And a great multitude rose up together against them, crying out. Then the captains rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat *them*. 23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast *them* into prison, charging the jailor to have them kept safely. 24 Who receiving such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks. 25 And at the middle of the night Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them. 26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: But immediately all the doors opened, and every one's bands were loosed. 27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison-doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled. 28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thy self no harm; for we are all here. 29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and trembling, fell down at the feet of Paul and Silas; 30 And brought them out, and securing the rest, he said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? 31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. 32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, with all that were in his house. 33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and



## The Acts of the Apostles.

and all his, straightway. 34 And when he had moreover brought them into his house, and set meat before them, he rejoiced, believing in God with all his house. 35 And when it was day, the captains came together into the court, *and* remembering the earthquake that had happened, they were afraid, and they sent the sergeants, who said, Let those men go, whom thou receivedst yesterday. 36 And the keeper of the prison came in and told these words to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go. 37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly, who are guiltless, and uncondemned, and are Romans, and they have cast us into prison; and now do they thrust us out privily? nay verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out. 38 And the sergeants told these words unto the captains: But when they heard that they were Romans, they were afraid. 39 And when they were come with many of their friends to the prison, they besought them to go out, saying, We were unacquainted with your affairs, that you are just men. And leading them out, they besought them, saying, Depart from this city, lest they again make an insurrection upon you, and grow bitter against you. 40 But they went out of the prison, and came to Lydia; and when they had seen the brethren, they declared to them how many things the Lord had done to them: and when they had exhorted them, they went out.

XVII. Now when they had passed through Amphipolis, they came to Apollonia, and thence to Thessalonica, where was a syna-

gogue of the Jews. 2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, *and* three sabbaths reasoned with them out of the scriptures, 3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you is Christ. 4 And some of them believed, and consorted with Paul and Silas on account of their doctrine: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and the chief women not a few. 5 But the Jews who believed not, moved with envy, gathered together wicked *fellows* of the badder sort, and getting the multitude together, they set the city on an uprore, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people. 6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying and saying, These that have subverted the world, are come hither also; 7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, That there is another king, Jesus. 8 And they troubled the multitude, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things. 9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the others, they dismissed them. 10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night to Berea: who coming, went away unto the synagogue of the Jews. 11 These were more generous than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so. 12 Therefore some of them believed: but some did not believe: also of the Hellenist women, and of those that were

## The Acts of the Apostles.

believed : among the which *was* Dionysius a certain Areopagite, of good quality ; and others with them.

XVIII. But he departed from Athens, and came to Corinth ;  
 2 And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, and his wife Priscilla, because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome, who also dwelt in Achaia, and Paul came unto him. 3 And because he *was* of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought. 4 But entering into the synagogue every sabbath, he reasoned ; and proposing the name of the Lord Jesus, he persuaded not only the Jews, but the Greeks also. 5 And when Silas and Timothy were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed by the word, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was the Lord. 6 But when there had been much discourse, and the scriptures had been interpreted, and when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, Paul shook *his* raiment, and said unto them, Your blood *be* upon your head ; I *am* clean : I go to the Gentiles. 7 And he departed from Aquila, and entered into a certain man's house named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joined hard to the synagogue. 8 And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house : and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were baptized ; believing on God, through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 And the Lord spake to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace : 10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on *thee*, to hurt thee : for I

have much people in this city.  
 11 And he continued in Corinth a year and six months, teaching them the word of God. 12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews combined unanimously against Paul, and talking together among themselves concerning Paul, and laying hands upon him, they brought him to the judgment-seat, 13 Crying out against him and saying, The fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law. 14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of injustice or gross wickedness, O ye men and Jews, I should with reason bear with you : 15 But if ye have questions of a word, and names, and of your law, look ye ; I will be no judge of such matters. 16 And he drave them from the judgment-seat. 17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgment-seat. 18 And Paul tarried yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila : having shorn *his* head in Cenchrea : for he had a vow. 19 But when he was come to Ephesus, and left them there, on the next sabbath he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews. 20 And when they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not : 21 Bidding them farewell, and saying, I must by all means keep this feast-day that is coming, at Jerusalem. I will return unto you, if God will, *and* he sailed from Ephesus. 22 And when he had landed at Cefares, and gone up and saluted the church, he went down

## The Acts of the Apostles.

down to Antioch. 23 And after he had spent some time, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, and strengthening all the disciples. 24 And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus. 25 Who was instructed in his own country in the word of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of Jesus, knowing only the baptism of John. 26 He began to speak boldly in the synagogue. Whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him *this* way more perfectly. 27 But certain Corinthians who lived at Ephesus, and heard him, desired him to pass over with them to their native country; but when he had given his consent, the Ephesians wrote to the disciples at Corinth, that they should receive the man: who when he sojourned in Achaia helped them much in the churches through grace. 28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, *and that* publicly discoursing, and shewing by the scriptures, that Jesus is the Christ.

XIX. But when Paul was desirous, according to his own will, to go to Jerusalem, the spirit said to him that he should return into Asia: but having passed through the upper parts he comes to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, 2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said, We have not so much as heard whether any do receive the Holy Ghost. 3 But he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto Johns baptism. 4

Then said Paul, John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, That they should believe on him who should come after him, that is, on Christ. 5 When they heard this, they were baptized unto the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins. 6 And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the Holy Ghost presently fell on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. 7 And all the men were about twelve. 8 But Paul entered into the synagogue with great power, and spake boldly for the space of three months, disputing and persuading what concerned the kingdom of God. 9 But then divers of them were hardened, and believed not, and spake evil of the way before the multitude of the Gentiles. Then Paul departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus, from the fifth hour to the tenth. 10 And this was for two years; *And* all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the words of the Lord, both Jews and Greeks. 11 But God wrought no small miracles by the hands of Paul: 12 So that from his body were carried unto the sick, handkerchiefs or aprons also, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out. 13 Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them who had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, I adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. 14 Among whom were also the sons of Sceva a Priest, who would do the same, having the custom to exorcise such persons. And when they had entered in to the Dæmoniack, they began to call on *that*

## The Acts of the Apostles.

that name, saying, We charge thee by Jesus whom Paul preacheth, to go out. 15 But the evil spirit answered *and* said to them, Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye? 16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, overcame them, and prevailed against them both; so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. 17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. 18 But many that believed came, and confessed, and told their deeds. 19 Many also of them who used curious arts, brought their books also together, and burned them before all: *and* they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand *pieces* of silver. 20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed, and the faith of God increased and multiplied. 21 Then Paul purposed in the spirit, to pass through Macedonia and Achaia, and to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome. 22 And he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timothy and to Erastus; and he himself stayed in Asia a little season. 23 And the same time there was no small stir about that way. 24 For there was a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, who brought no small gain unto the craftsmen. 25 He having called *them* together, with the workmen of like occupation, said unto them, Men and fellow craftsmen, ye know that by this art we have our livelyhood. 26 Ye both hear and see, that not alone as far as Ephesus, but al-

most throughout all Asia also, this Paul then persuaded and turned away a great multitude, saying, that these are no gods who are made with hands: 27 So that not only this part of our trade is in danger to be under reproach, but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be set at nought, and destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshipeth. 28 And when they heard these things they were full of wrath, and running into the road, they cried out, saying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians. 29 And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre. 30 And when Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples hindered him. 31 And certain of the Asiarchs, who were his friends, sent unto him, *and* besought *him* that he would not adventure himself into the theatre. 32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused; and the greater part knew not wherefore they were come together. 33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. Alexander therefore beckned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people. 34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, with one voice of them all about the space of two hours, they cried out, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians. 35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the multitude he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that our city is a keeper of the temple of the great Diana, and

## The Acts of the Apostles.

and of that which fell down from Jupiter? 36 Seeing then that these things cannot be denied, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly. 37 For ye have brought hither these men, who are neither robbers of temples, nor yet blasphemers of our goddesses. 38 Wherefore if this Demetrius and the craftsmen who are with him have a matter against them, the courts are held, and there are pleaders, let them be accusers of one another. 39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined by the law of the assembly. 40 For we are in danger to be accused this day for an uprore, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse. 41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

XX. And after the tumult was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and exhorted *them* in many words, and took his leave of them, and departed for Macedonia. 2 And when he had gone over all those parts, and had given *them* much exhortation he came into Greece. 3 And abode three months: and when the Jews laid wait for him, he was desirous to sail into Syria, but the Spirit said to him that he should return through Macedonia. 4 And when he was about to go forth, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus, and Gaius; Of Derbe, Timothy; and of the Ephesians Eutychus and Trophimus accompanied him as far as Asia. 5 But these going before, tarried for him at Troas. 6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas, in five days, wherein we abode se-

ven. days. 7 But upon the first *day* of the week, when we the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, *and* continued his speech until midnight: 8 And there were many lamps in the upper chamber where we were gathered together. 9 And there sat in the window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead. 10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embraced *him*, and said, Be not troubled, for his life is in him. 11 And when he being come up again, and having broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed. 12 And when they had saluted him, they brought the young man alive, and they were not a little comforted. 13 And we went down to the ship, and sailed unto Assos, thence intending to take in Paul, for so had he appointed, as being himself to go aloft. 14 And when he met us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene. 15 And we sailed thence, and came the next *day* over against Chios; and the next *day* we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllia; and the next *day* we came to Miletus. 16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, lest somewhat should detain him in Asia: for he hasted to be at Jerusalem against the day of Pentecost. 17 And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, for the elders of the church. 18 And as they were with him, he said unto them, Ye know, Brethren, from the first day that I came

## The Acts of the Apostles.

came into Asia, after what manner I was always with you for three years, or even more. 19 Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with tears, and temptations which befel me by the lying in wait of the Jews: 20 How I kept back nothing that was profitable, but have shewed you, and have taught from house to house publicly, 21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and the faith which is by our Lord Jesus Christ. 22 And now, behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there: 23 Save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth to me in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me at Jerusalem. 24 But this I do not value, neither count I my life dear unto my self, so that I may finish my course, and the ministry of the word, which word I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify to Jews and Gentiles the gospel of the grace of God. 25 And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of Jesus, shall see my face no more. 26 Wherefore I call you to witness this day, that I am pure from the blood of all of you: 27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God. 28 Take heed unto your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of the Lord, which he hath purchased with his own blood. 29 I know that after my departing, grievous wolves will enter in among you, not sparing the flock. 30 Also of your own selves will men arise, speaking perverse things, to turn away the disciples after them.

51 Therefore watch, and remember that for three years night and day I ceased not to warn every one of you with tears. 32 And now, I commend you to the Lord, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them who are sanctified. 33 I have coveted the silver, and gold, or apparel of none of you. 34 You yourselves know, that my hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to all them that were with me. 35 I have shewed you every thing, that so labouring ye ought to support the weak; and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, that he said, 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.' 36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all. 37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him, 38 Sorrowing most of all for the word which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

XXI. And it came to pass, that after we were parted from them, and had lunched, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara, and Myra. 2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth. 3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, leaving it on the left hand, we sailed into Syria, and came down to Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden. 4 And finding disciples, we tarried with them seven days: who said to Paul by the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem. 5 And when

Y

we

## The Acts of the Apostles.

we had accomplished those days, we departed, and the next day we went out and walked our way, and they all brought us on our journey, with wives and children, till ~~we were~~ out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed. 6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, they returned home again. 7 And when we had finished ~~our~~ course from Tyre, we went down to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day. 8 And the next ~~day~~ we departed, and came unto Cesarea; and we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, who was of the seven, and abode with him. 9 And he had four daughters, virgins, who did prophesy. 10 And as we tarried many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus. 11 And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own feet and hands, and said, Thus saith the Holy Ghost, So shall the Jews in Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver ~~him~~ into the hands of the Gentiles. 12 And when we heard these things, we and they of that place, besought Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. 13 Then Paul said unto us, What mean ye to weep, and to disturb mine heart? for I am not only willing to be bound, but also am ready to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. 14 And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying one to another, The will of God be done. 15 And after certain days, we took our leaves, and went up to Jerusalem. 16 ~~But there went with us also certain of the disciples of Cesarea. But these~~

brought us to an old disciple. And when we were come to a certain village, we were with one Nafon of Cyprus an old disciple, with whom we should lodge. And going out thence, 17 We came to Jerusalem, But the brethren received us gladly. 18 And the ~~day~~ following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were with him. 19 And when he had saluted ~~them~~, he declared particularly how God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry. 20 And when they heard ~~it~~, they glorified the Lord, saying, Thou seekest, brother, how many thousands in Judea there are who have believed, and they are all zealots of the law. 21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest the Jews who are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moles, not to circumcise ~~their~~ children, neither to walk after the customs. 22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come. 23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: we have four men which have a vow on them; 24 Them take, and be purified thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave ~~their~~ heads: and all will know that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the law. 25 As touching the Gentiles which have believed, they have nothing to say to thee, for we have written and determined, that they observe no such thing, save only, that they keep themselves from what is offered to idols, and from blood, and from fornication. 26 Then Paul took the men,

## The Acts of the Apostles.

men, and the next day purifying himself with them, entered into the temple, to signify the days in which the purification would be accomplished, that an offering might be offered for every one of them. 27 But when the seventh day was fulfilled, the Jews who were of Asia, came, when they saw him in the temple, and stirred up the whole multitude and laid hands on him, 28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help: this is the man that teacheth all every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and hath brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place. 29 For they had seen before with him in the city, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom † we supposed  
† *Read* that Paul had brought they. into the temple, 30 And the whole city was moved, and there was a concourse of the people; and they seized upon Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut. 31 But as they sought to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uprore. 32 Who immediately took soldiers, and centurions, and ran down upon them: and when they saw the chief captain, and the soldiers, they left beating of Paul. 33 Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains; and demanded, who he was, and what he had done. 34 And some cried one thing, some another among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle. 35 And when

he was upon the stairs, so it was that Paul was born of the soldiers, for the violence of the multitude. 36 For the multitude followed after, crying out, that he should be slain. 37 And as he was to be led into the castle, he answered and said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek? 38 Art not thou that Egyptian which before these days madest an uprore, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers? 39 But Paul said, I am a man who am a Jew, but born at Tarsus; and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people. 40 And when the chief captain had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckned with the hand unto them: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

XXII. Men, brethren, and fathers, hear ye the defence which I make now unto you. 2 And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue they were silent; and he saith, 3 I am a man who am a Jew, born in Tarsus, of Cilicia, but brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, being zealous towards God, as ye all are this day. 4 And I persecuted this way unto death, binding and delivering unto prison both men and women. 5 As also the high priest will bear me witness, and all the Presbytery; from whom I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them who were there bound unto Jerusalem, that they might be  
Y 2 punished.



## The Acts of the Apostles.

punished. 6 As I was come nigh unto Damascus, about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me. 7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? 8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? But he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest. 9 And they that were with me saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake unto me. 10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And he said unto me, Arise, and go to Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed thee to do. 11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came to Damascus. 12 And one Ananias, a man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews who dwelt *there*, 13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him. 14 And he said to me, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that just one, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth. 15 For thou shalt be his witness unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard. 16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on his name. 17 And it came to pass, that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance: 18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in the synagogues them that believed on thee. 20 And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I was standing by, and consenting, and kept the raiment of them that slew him. 21 And he said unto me, Depart: for I send thee far unto the Gentiles. 22 And they hearkened as far as this word, and lift up their voice, and said, Take away such an one from the earth: for it is not fit he should live. 23 And as they cried out, and cast off *their* cloaths, and threw dust to heaven, 24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bade that he should be examined by stripes; that he might know wherefore they cried so against him. 25 And as they bound him with thongs, he said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned? 26 When the centurion heard this, that he called himself a Roman, he went to the chief captain, and told him, saying, Take heed what thou art doing; for this man is a Roman. 27 Then the chief captain came, and asked him, Tell me, Art thou a Roman? He said, I am. 28 And the chief captain answered and said to him, I know with what sum I obtained this freedom: And Paul said, But I was *free-born*. 29 Then they departed from him who should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid, after he knew that he was a citizen of Rome, and because he had bound him. 30 On the morrow, being willing to know the certainty of what he was accused by the Jews, he loosed him, and commanded the chief priests,

## The Acts of the Apostles.

priests, and all the council to come together, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

XXIII. And Paul earnestly beholding the council, said, Men, brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, until this day. 2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth. 3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall : for sittest thou and judgest me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law? 4 And they that stood by, said, Revilest thou God's high priest? 5 Now Paul said, I knew not, brethren, that he was the high priest : For it is written, Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people. 6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, Men, brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of the Pharisees : of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question. 7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees : and the multitude was dissolved. 8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit : but the Pharisees confess both. 9 And there arose a great cry : and some of the Pharisees arose, and strove, saying, We find no evil in this man : What if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him? 10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and take him by force from among them, and to lead him away into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul : for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome. 12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under an anathema, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. 13 And they were more than forty who had made this confederacy. 14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great anathema, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul. 15 Now therefore ye with the council, signify to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him : and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him. 16 And when Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered in to the castle, and told Paul. 17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain : for he hath a certain thing to tell him. 18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee. 19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me? 20 And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring down Paul tomorrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly. 21 But do not thou yield unto them : for there lie in wait for him

## The Acts of the Apostles,

him of them more than forty men, who have bound themselves with an anathema, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee. 22 So the chief captain let the young man depart, and charged *him*, Tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me. 23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night. 24 And provide beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring *him* safe unto Felix the governor. For he was afraid lest the Jews should seize on him, and kill him; and he should afterward bear the reproach, as if he would have taken money. 25 And he wrote a letter, containing what follows. 26 Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governor Felix, greeting. 27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them; then came I with an army, and rescued *him*, having understood that he was a Roman. 28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council: 29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds. 30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what *they* had against him. Farewel. 31 Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul and

brought *him* by night to Antipatris. 32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle. 33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governor, presented Paul also before him. 34 And when he had read it, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia; 35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herod's judgment-hall.

XXIV. And after five days, Ananias the high priest, descended with certain elders, and a certain orator Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul. 2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that many worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence, 3 We accept *it* always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness. 4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words. 5 We have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of seditions among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes: 6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took and would have judged according to our law. 7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took *him* away out of our hands, 8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayst take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him. 9 And the Jews also

## The Acts of the Apostles.

also assented, saying, that these things were so. 10 Then Paul, after that the governor had beckned unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do cheerfully answer for my self: 11 Because that thou mayst understand, that there are yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship. 12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city: 13 Neither can they prove to thee the things whereof they now accuse me. 14 But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which they call an heresy, so worship I my Father, and my God; believing all things which are written in the law and the prophets: 15 And have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection, both of the just and unjust. 16 And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men. 17 Now after many years, I came to bring alms to my nation, offerings, and vows. 18 Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult, 19 Who ought to have been seen here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me. 20 Or else let these same say, if they have found any evil-doing in me, while I stood before the council, 21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you this day. 22 And Felix having

more perfect knowledge of the way, he deferred them, and said, When Lyfias the chief captain shall come down, I will hear you. 23 And he commanded a centurion to keep him, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister to him. 24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ Jesus. 25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee. 26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul; wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him. 27 But after two years, Porcius Festus came in the room of Felix, and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

XXV. Now when Festus was come into the province, after three days he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem. 2 Then the high priests and the chief of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him, 3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him. 4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly. 5 Let them therefore, said he, who among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any crime in him. 6 And when he had tarried among them not more than eight or ten days, he went down

## The Acts of the Apostles.

down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgment-seat, commanded Paul to be brought. 7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about him, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove: 8 While Paul answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all. 9 But Festus, willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me? 10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars judgment-seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest. 11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar. 12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go. 13 And after certain days, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus. 14 And when they had been there many days, Festus declared Paul's *cause* unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix: 15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring condemnation against him. 16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans

to deliver any man to die, before that he who is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crimes laid against him. 17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgment seat, and I commanded the man to be brought forth. 18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought no wicked accusation of such things as I supposed: 19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus who was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. 20 And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters. 21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar. 22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man my self. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him. 23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth. 24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men who are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me at Jerusalem, desiring, and crying that he ought not to live any longer. 25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself

## The Acts of the Apostles.

himself hath appealed to Augustus. I have determined to send *him*. 26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I may have somewhat that I may write. 27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withal to signify the crimes against him.

XXVI. Then Agrippa said unto Paul, thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself, 2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews. 3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech *thee* to hear me patiently. 4 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews, 5 Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee. 6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers: 7 Unto which our twelve tribes serving day and night, hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews. 8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead? 9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of

Nazareth. 10 Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death I gave my voice against *them*. 11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled *them* to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted *them* even unto strange cities. 12 Whereupon, as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests; 13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them who journeyed with me. 14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? *It is hard for thee to kick against the goads.* 15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. 16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; 17 Delivering thee from the people, and the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, 18 To open their eyes, and to turn *them* from darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them who are sanctified by faith that is in me. 19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision: 20 But shewed first unto them of

## The Acts of the Apostles.

Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and to the Gentiles, that they should repent, and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance. 21 For this cause the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me, 22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great; saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come: 23 That Christ should suffer, that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles. 24 And as he thus spake, and made his apology for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thyself: much learning doth make thee mad. 25 But Paul said, I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness. 26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him: Nor was this thing done in a corner. 27 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest. 28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian. 29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds. 30 And the king rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and they that sat with them. 31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death,

or of bonds. 32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

XXVII. And when it was determined that he should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band. 2 And entering into a ship of Adramyttium, we lunched, meaning to sail to the places of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. 3 But the next day we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends, to refresh himself. 4 And when we had lunched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary. 5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Lystra of Lycia. 6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy; and he put us therein. 7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind not suffering us, we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone: 8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called the fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city Thalsassa. 9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul comforted them, 10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives. 11 Nevertheless, the centurion, believed the master and

## The Acts of the Apostles.

and Pilot of the ship, more than those things which were spoken by Paul. 12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, to winter; which is an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the south-west, and north-west. 13 And when the south-wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained *their* purpose, loosing they sailed close by Crete. 14 But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called The North-east *wind*. 15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let *her* drive. 16 And running under a certain island which is called Cauda, we had much work to come by the boat: 17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quick sands, struck sail, and so were driven. 18 And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next *day* they lightened the ship: 19 And the third *day* they cast out with their own hands the tackling of the ship. 20 And when neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay on *us*, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away. 21 And after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss. 22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of life among you, but of the ship. 23 For there stood by me this night,

the angel of God, whose I am; and whom I serve, 24 Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Cesar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee. 25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me. 26 Howbeit, we must be cast upon a certain Island. 27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some country: 28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, found it fifteen fathoms. 29 But fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day. 30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast anchors out of the foreship, 31 Paul said to the centurion, and to the soldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved. 32 Then the soldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off. 33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, ye have waited this fourteenth day, and continued fasting, having taken nothing. 34 Wherefore I pray you take meat; for this is for your health: for there shall not an hair perish from the head of any of you. 35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken *it*, he began to eat. 36 Then were they all of good cheer,



## The Acts of the Apostles:

cheer, and they also took meat. 37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen souls. 38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea. 39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship. 40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed *themselves* unto the sea, and loosed the rudder-bands, and hoisted up the main-sail to the wind, and made toward shore. 41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground; and the fore-part stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the sea. 42 And the soldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape. 43 But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from *their* purpose, and commanded that they who could swim, should cast *themselves* first into the sea, and get to land: 44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on *pieces* of the ship: and so it came to pass that they escaped all safe to land.

XXVIII. And when we were escaped, then we knew that the island was called Melita. 2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and refreshed us every one, because of the present rain, and because of the cold. 3 And when Paul had gathered a certain bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastned on his hand. 4 And when the barbarians saw the ve-

nomous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live. 5 And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm. 6 Howbeit, they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god. 7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who received us, and lodged us three days courteously. 8 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. 9 So when this was done, all others also who had diseases in the island, came, and were healed: 10 Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded *us* with such things as were necessary. 11 And after three monthis, we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor and Pollux. 12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried three days. 13 And from thence we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium: and after one day the south wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli: 14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days: and so we went toward Rome. 15 And from thence when the brethren heard *of it*, they came to meet us as far as Appii forum, and the Tres Tabernæ, whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and

## The Acts of the Apostles.

and took courage. 16 And when we came to Rome, Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a soldier that kept him. 17 And it came to pass, that after three days, he called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men, brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans. 18 Who when they had examined me, would have let *me* go, because there was no cause of death in me. 19 But when the Jews spake against *it*, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar; not that I had ought to accuse my nation of. 20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see and to speak with *you*: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain. 21 But they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee. 22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against. 23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him unto his lodging; to whom he expounded testifying the kingdom of God,

and persuading them concerning Jesus, out of the law of Moses, and *out of* the prophets, from morning till evening. 24 And *some* believed the things which were spoken, but some believed not. 25 And when they agreed not *among* themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet, unto our fathers, 26 Saying, Go unto this people, and say unto them, Hearing, ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive. 27 For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. 28 Be it known therefore unto you, that this salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and *that* they will hear it. 29 And when he had said these things, the Jews departed, and had much reasoning among themselves. 30 But Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, 31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

## Wanting in the *Greek Part of Beza's Copy.*

Two Leaves from *Matt.* I. 1. — 20.

Eight Leaves from *Matt.* V. 20. — IX. 2.

XXVII. 1. — 12.

*John* I. 16. — III. 26.

*Acts* VIII. 29. — X. 14.

XXI. 2. — 10.

XXII. 10. — 20.

from v. 29, to the End of the  
Book : 6 Chapters.

## Wanting in the *Clermont Copy.*

*Rom.* I. 1. — 7.

*1 Cor.* XIV. 12. — 22.

*Heb.* XIII. 21. — 25.

## Wanting in the *Alexandrian Copy.*

*Matt.* I. 1. — XXV. 6.

*John* VI. 50. — VIII. 52.

*2 Cor.* IV. 13. — XII. 2.

## Wanting in the *Vatican Copy.*

*Heb.* IX. 14. to the End of the  
Book : With the entire Epistles  
to *Timothy*, *Titus*, and *Philemon*,  
as also the whole *Apocalypse*.

W. W.

# XIV. E P I S T L E S

O F

P A U L the APOSTLE,

T O T H E

ROMANS,  
1 CORINTHIANS,  
2 CORINTHIANS,  
GALATIANS,  
[LAODICEANS, or] EPHESIANS.  
COLOSSIANS,  
PHILIPPIANS,  
1 THESSALONIANS,  
2 THESSALONIANS,  
1 TIMOTHY,  
2 TIMOTHY,  
TITUS,  
PHILEMON,  
HEBREWS,

According to the *Greek* of the *Clermont* Manuscript, now probably between 1400 and 1500 Years old, in the King of *France's* Library at *Paris*: According to the Collation in *Dr. Mills's New Testament*: the *Latin* of which Copy is Part of the Old *Italic* Version, made early in the Second Century.

---

Published by Mr. *WHISTON*.

---

The modern Distinctions of CHAPTERS, and VERSES, and SENTENCES, and WORDS, are here also retained, tho' they be not in the Manuscript.

---

## ¶ The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the ROMANS.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL a servant of Jesus Christ, the called apostle, separated unto the gospel of God, 2 Which he had promised afore by his prophets, in the holy scriptures 3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was made to him of the seed of David, according to the flesh, 4 And fore ordained the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead : 5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name : 6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ. 7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, the called saints : Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. 9 For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing, I make mention of you always in my prayers, 10 Making request if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto you. 11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end you may be established : 12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you, by the mutual faith both of you and me. 13 Now I suppose

that you are not ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, but was hindered hitherto, that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles. 14 I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise. 15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel among you that are at Rome also. 16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel : for it is the Power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth ; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. 17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith : as it is written, The just shall live by faith. 18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness, and unrighteousness of those men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. 19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest in them ; for God hath shewed it to them. 20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, his eternal power and Godhead ; so that they are without excuse : 21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful ; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. 22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools : 23 And changed the glory of the incorruptible God, into an image made like to corruptible

## Romans.

ruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things. 24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves : 25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. 26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections : For even their women changed the natural use into that which is against nature and use : 27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the women, burned in their lust one toward another ; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. 28 And even as they did not like to retain God in *their* knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient : 29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, maliciousness, fornication, covetousness ; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity ; Whisperers, 30 Evil speakers, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, 31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, unmerciful : 32 Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, they not only do the same, but consent to them that do them.

II. Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest : for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself ; for thou that judgest, doest the same things. 2 But we are sure that the judgment of

God is according to truth, against them who commit such things. 3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them who do such things, and dost the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God ? 4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance ? 5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart, treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgment of God ; 6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds : 7 To them who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality ; eternal life : 8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness ; wrath and indignation ; 9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile. 10 Glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile. 11 For there is no respect of persons with God. 12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law : and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law, 13 For not the hearers of the law *are* just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. 14 For when the Gentiles who have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves : 15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and thoughts the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another, 16 In the day

day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel. 17 But if thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God; 18 And knowest *his* will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law, 19 And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them who are in darkness, 20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, who hast the form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law. 21 Thou therefore who teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? 22 Thou that sayst a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege? 23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God? 24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is written. 25 For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision. 26 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? 27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law? 28 For he is not a Jew, who is one outwardly; neither circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: 29 But he *is* a Jew, who is one inwardly; and circumcision *is* of the heart, in the spirit, not in the letter, whose praise is not of men but of God.

III. What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit of circumcision? 2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God. 3 For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect? 4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged. 5 But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? *Is* God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? I speak as a man, 6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world? 7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner? 8 And not, as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just. 9 What then have we before *them* that is extraordinary? Nothing at all: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; 10 As it is written, there is none righteous, not one: 11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. 12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one. 13 Their throat *is* an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps *is* under their lips: 14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. 15 Their feet *are* swift to shed blood. 16 Destruction and misery *are* in their ways: 17 And the way of peace have they not known. 18 There is no fear of God before *their*

their eyes. 19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. 20 Therefore by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. 21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; 22 Even the righteousness of God by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe; for there is no difference: 23 For all have sinned; and come short of the glory of God; 24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ: 25 Whom God hath set forth a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that were formerly through the forbearance of God; 26 To declare at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him who believeth in Jesus Christ. 27 Where *is* boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? No: but of the law of faith. 28 For we conclude, that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law. 29 *Is* he the God of the Jews only? and not of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also: 30 Seeing *it is* one God, who shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith. 31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

IV. What shall we say then that Abraham our father found according to the flesh? 2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath to glory, but not before

God. 3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. 4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. 5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. 6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works. 7 Blessed *are* they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. 8 Blessed *is* the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin. 9 *Is* this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the circumcision also? For we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness. 10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision. 11 And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which *he had* being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also: 12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham. 13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. 14 For if they which are of the law *be* heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect. 15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, *there is* no transgression. 16 Therefore *it is* of the faith of Jesus, by grace;



to the end that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all, 17 As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations before him whom he believed, God, who quickneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were: 18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the Father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be. 19 And being not weak in the faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's Womb. 20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God: 21 And being fully persuaded, that what he had promised he was able also to perform. 22 Therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. 23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him for righteousness. 24 But for us also to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead, 25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

V. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ. 2 By whom also we have access into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. 3 And not only this, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience; 4 And patience, experience; and experience, hope: 5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed

abroad in our hearts, by the Holy Ghost. 6 For when we were yet without Strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. 8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9 Much more then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. 10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. 11 And not only this, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have already received the atonement. 12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entered in the world, and death by sin; and so it passed upon all men, for that all have sinned. 13 For until the law, sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. 14 Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come: 15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one, the many be dead; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. 16 And not as *it was* by one sin, *so is* the gift: for the judgment *was* by one to condemnation: but the free gift *is* of many offences unto justification of life. 17 For if by one offence, death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one Jesus Christ. 18 There-

Therefore as by one offence *it came* upon all men to condemnation : even so by one righteousness *it came* upon all men unto justification of life. 19 For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners : so by the obedience of one man, shall many be made righteous. 20 Moreover, the law entered, that the offence might abound : But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound : 21 That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

VI. What shall we say then ? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound ? 2 God forbid : how shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein ? 3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized unto his death ? 4 Therefore we are buried with him by Baptism unto death : that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. 5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death : we shall also be of *his* resurrection : 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7 For he that is dead, is justified from sin. 8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Christ : 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more : death hath no more dominion over him. 10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once : but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. 11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves dead indeed unto sin ; but alive unto

God through Jesus Christ. 12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it. 13 Neither yield ye your members instruments of unrighteousness unto sin : but yield your selves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead ; and your members instruments of righteousness unto God. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you : for ye are not under the law, but under grace. 15 What then ? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace ? God forbid. 16 Or know ye not, that to whom ye yield your selves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey ; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness ? 17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin : but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine to which ye were delivered. 18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness. 19 I speak after the manner of men, because of the infirmity of your flesh : for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and so iniquity, unto iniquity ; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness, unto holiness. 20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness. 21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed ? for truly the end of those things *is* death. 22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. 23 For the wages of sin *is* death : but the gift of God *is* eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

VII. Know ye not, brethren, for I speak to them that know the law how that the law hath dominion

dominion over man, as long as he liveth? 2 For the woman who hath an husband, is bound by the law to the husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of the husband. 3 So then, if while *the* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. 4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye are also become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. 5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. 6 But now we are delivered from the law of death, wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of the Spirit, and not oldness of the letter. 7 What shall we say then? *Is* the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. 8 But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin *is* dead. 9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. 10 And the commandment which *was* to life, I found *to be* unto death. 11 For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. 12 Wherefore the law *is* holy; and the commandment holy, and just, and good. 13 Was then that which is good, made death unto me? By no means.

But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. 14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. 15 For that which I do, I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate I do. 16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto ~~the~~ law, that *it is* good. 17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but to perform that which is good, I find not. 19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. 21 I find then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me. 22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man. 23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity in the law of sin, which is in my members. 24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 The grace of God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the mind I my self serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

VIII. *There is* therefore no condemnation to them who are in Christ Jesus. 2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death. 3 What the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son, in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin condemned sin

in the flesh : 4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us ; who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. 5 For they that are after the flesh, do mind the things of the flesh ; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6 For to be carnally minded, *is* death ; but to be spiritually minded, *is* life and peace : 7 Because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God : for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God. 9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. 10 And if Christ *be* in you, the body *is* dead, because of sin ; but the Spirit *is* life, because of righteousness. 11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you ; he that raised up Christ Jesus from the dead, shall also quicken your mortal bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. 13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die : but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the flesh, ye shall live. 14 For as many are led by the Spirit of God, they are the Sons of God. 15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear ; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 16 Wherefore the Spirit it self beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God. 17 And if children, then fellow heirs ; heirs of God, and fellow heirs with Christ : if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together. 18 For I reckon, that the suffer-

ings of this present time, *are* not comparable to the glory which shall be revealed in us. 19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the Sons of God. 20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly ; but by reason of him who hath subjected *it* in hope : 21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, unto the glorious liberty of the children of God. 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth, and travaileth in pain together until now : 23 And not only *they*, but we our selves also, who have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we our selves groan with them in our selves, waiting for the adoption, the redemption of our body. 24 For we are saved by hope : But hope that is seen, is not hope : for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for ? 25 But if we hope for that we see not, we do with patience wait for it. 26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmity : for we know not what we should pray for as we ought : but the Spirit it self maketh intercession, with groanings which cannot be uttered. 27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what *is* the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to God. 28 And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are called according to *his* purpose. 29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren. 30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called : and whom he called, them he also justified : and

and whom he justified, them he also glorified. 31 What shall we then say to these things? if God *be* for us, who is against us? 32. He that did not so much as spare his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? 33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? *It is* God that justifieth: 34 Who *is* he that condemneth? *It is* Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again; who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. 35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? tribulation, or distress, persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? 36 As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. 37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors on account of him that loved us. 38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angel, nor authority, nor principality, nor power, nor things present, nor things to come, 39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

IX. I say the truth in Christ Jesus, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost, 2 That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. 3 For I could wish that myself were an anathema from Christ, for my brethen and kinsmen who are according to the flesh: 4 Who are Israelites; to whom is the adoption, and the

glory, and the covenant, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promise; 5 Whose *are* the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh is Christ,\* who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen. 6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For all that are of Israel, are not Israelites. 7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, *are they* all children: but, in Isaac shall thy seed be called. 8 That is, They who are the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed. 9 For this *is* the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a Son. 10 And not only *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceived at one conception by our father Isaac, 11 For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth. 12 It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. 13 As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. 14 What shall we say then? *Is there* unrighteousness with God? By no means. 15 For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. 16 So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. 17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power

\* Read this as the Apostles do in their Constitutions, One Lord Jesus Christ, blessed for ever, to the Glory of God the Father. Amen. *mill.* 13.

## Romans.

in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. 18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will, and whom he will, he hardeneth. 19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he therefore find fault? For who hath resisted his will? 20 O man, who art thou that repliest against God? shall the thing formed say to him that formed *it*, Why hast thou formed me thus? 21 Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? 22 *What* if God, willing to shew *his* wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: 23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory? 24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles. 25 As he saith also in Olee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her, beloved, who was not beloved. 26 And it shall come to pass, in the place where it was said unto them, Ye *are* not my people; there shall they be called, the children of the living God. 27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved. 28 For he will smite the word, and cut *it* short: which word the Lord will make upon the earth. 29 And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Hosts had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrah. 30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles who follow not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the

righteousness which is of faith: 31 But Israel, which followed after the law, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. 32 Wherefore? Because it was not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: They stumbled at that stumbling stone; 33 As it is written, Behold I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rock of scandal, and he that believeth on him, shall not be ashamed.

X. Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel *is*, that they might be saved. 2 For I bear them record, that they have a Zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. 3 For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. 4 For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. 5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man who doth *it*, shall live by *it*. 6 But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not, Who shall ascend into heaven? that is to bring Christ down, 7 Or, Who shall descend into the abyss? that is to bring up Christ again from the dead. 8 But what saith the scripture: The word is nigh thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach, 9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. 11 For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him, shall by no means be ashamed.

shamed. 12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek : for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him. 13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved. 14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed ? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard ? and how shall they hear without a preacher ? 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent ? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things ! 16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report ? 17 So then, faith is by hearing, and hearing by the Word. 18 But I say, Have they not heard ? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world. 19 But I say, hath not Israel known ? First, Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by no people, by a foolish nation I will anger you. 20 But Esaias saith, I was found in them that sought me not ; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me. 21 But to Israel he saith, All the day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

XI. I say then, Hath God cast away his people whom he foreknew ? By no means. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 God hath not cast away his people whom he foreknew. Know ye not what the scripture saith of Elias ? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, 3 Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars ; and I am left

alone, and they seek my life. 4 But what saith the answer of God unto him ? I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to Baal. 5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. 6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works : otherwise grace is no more grace. 7 What then ? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for ; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded : 8 According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this day. 9 And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompence unto them. 10 Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway. 11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall ? By no means ; but thro' their fall, salvation *is* unto the Gentiles, to provoke them to jealousy. 12 Now if the fall of them *be* the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles : how much more their fulness ? 13 For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am an apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office : 14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation my flesh, and might save some of them. 15 For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world ; what *shall* the receiving *be*, but life from the dead ? 16 For if the first-fruit *be* holy, the lump *is so* also : and if the root *be* holy, *so are* the branches. 17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in amongst

amongst them, and with them partake of the fatness of the olive-tree ; 18 Boast not against the branches : but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. 19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. 20 Well ; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear. 21 For if God spared not the natural branches, lest he also spare not thee. 22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God : on them which fell, severity ; but towards thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness : otherwise thou also shalt be cut off, 23 And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in : for God is able to graft them in again. 24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive-tree ; how much more shall these which be the natural, be grafted into their own olive-tree ? 25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that blindness in part is hapned to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. 26 And so all Israel shall be saved : as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob. 27 For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. 28 As concerning the gospel, *they are* enemies for your sake : but as touching the election, beloved for the fathers sakes. 29 For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance. 30 For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained

mercy thro' their unbelief : 31 Even so have these also now not believed, that thro' the mercy bestowed on you they also may now obtain mercy. 32 For God hath concluded all things in unbelief, that he may have mercy upon all. 33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God ! how unsearchable his judgments, and his ways past finding out ! 34 For who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his counsellor ? 35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again ? 36 For of him, and through him, and to him, *are* all things : to whom *be* glory for ever Amen.

XII. I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, your reasonable service. 2 And be not conformed to this world : but be ye transformed by the renewing of the mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God. 3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think more highly than he ought to think ; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. 4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office : 5 So we being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. 6 Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, according to the analogy of the faith. 7 Or ministry, on ministering ; or he that teacheth, on teaching ; 8 He that exhorteth on exhortation : he that giveth, with simplicity ; he that ruleth,



## Romans.

ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness. 9 *Let love be without dissimulation.* Abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good. 10 Be kindly affectioned one to another; with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another. 11 Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the season. 12 Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer: 13 Distributing to the memorials of the saints; given to hospitality. 14 Bless them who persecute you: bless, and curse not. 15 Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. 16 *Be of the same mind one towards another.* Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. 17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. 18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord. 20 If thine enemy hunger, feed him; and if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. 21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

XIII. Be subject unto all souls that are in authority. For there is no power but of God: those that be, are ordained of God. 2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves judgment. 3 For rulers are not a terror to a good work, but to an evil one. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that

which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: 4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger upon him that doth evil. 5 Wherefore, be ye subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. 6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. 7 Render to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour. 8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law. 9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not covet; and if *there be* any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self. 10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: And love is the fulfilling of the law. 11 And that, knowing the time, that now *it is* high time to awake out of sleep: for now *is* our salvation nearer than when we believed. 12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast away the works of darkness, but let us put on the armour of light. 13 Let us walk honestly as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. 14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, unto its lusts.

XIV. Him that is weak in the faith receive you, not to the judging of his reasonings. 2 For one believeth

believeth that he may eat all things : Let another who is weak, eat herbs. 3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not ; let not him that eateth not, judge him that eateth : for God hath received him. 4 Who art thou that judgest another man's servant ? to his own master he standeth or falleth : Yea, he shall be holden up : for God is able to make him stand. 5 One man esteemeth one day above another : another esteemeth every day. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. 6 He that regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord : And he that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks ; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks. 7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. 8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord ; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord : whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lord's. 9 For to this end Christ both lived, and died, and rose again, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living. 10 But why dost thou judge thy brother in not eating ; or why dost thou set at nought thy brother ? for we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of God. 11 For it is written, I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. 12 So every one of us shall render an account of himself to God. 13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more : but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling-block, or an occasion to fall in the brother's way. 14 I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that nothing is unclean of it self : but to him that

esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean. 15 For if thy brother be grieved with meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. 16 Let not then our good be evil spoken of. 17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. 18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men. 19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and observe the things wherewith one may edify another. 20 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure ; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. 21 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor that whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is scandalized, or is made weak. 22 Hast thou faith ? have it to thy self before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. 23 And he that doubteth, is condemned if he eat, because it is not of faith : for whatsoever is not of faith, is sin.

XV. We then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. 2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for good to edification. 3 For even Christ pleased not himself ; but as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me. 4 For whatsoever things were written, were written for our learning ; that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. 5 Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be unanimous one towards another, according to Christ

Christ Jesus : 6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. 7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received you to the glory of God. 8 For I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises unto the fathers : 9 And that the Gentiles might glorify God for *his* mercy ; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name. 10 And again he saith, Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people. 11 And again he saith, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud him, all ye people. 12 And again Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles ; in him shall the Gentiles trust. 13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace ; that ye may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Ghost. 14 And I my self also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye are full of goodness, and filled with all knowledge, able to admonish one another. 15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God, 16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God ; that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost. 17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ. 18 For I will not dare to say any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed, 19 Through his migh-

ty signs and wonders, by the power of the Holy Spirit ; so that from Jerusalem unto Illyricum and round about, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ. 20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel where Christ was not named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation : 21 But as it is written, To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see : and they that have not heard, shall understand. 22 For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you. 23 But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come unto you ; 24 Whosoever therefore I take my journey into Spain, I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with you. 25 But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minister unto the saints. 26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor saints who are at Jerusalem, 27 And their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things. 28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain. 29 And I know that when I come unto you, I shall come in the full assurance of the blessing of Christ. 30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me ; 31 And I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judea ; and that my present for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints : 32 That I may

## Romans.

I may come unto you with joy by the will of Christ Jesus, and may with you be refreshed. 33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

XVI. I commend unto you Phebe our sister, who is a deaconess of the church which is at Cenchrea : 2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you : for she hath been a succourer of my self, and of many also. 3 Greet Prisca and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus, and the church that is in their house. 4 Who have for my life laid down their own necks : unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles. 5 Salute my wellbeloved Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Asia in Christ. 6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour among you. 7 Salute Andronicus and Junias my kinsmen, and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who were in Christ Jesus before me. 8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord. 9 Salute Urbane our helper in the Lord, and Stachys my beloved. 10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them who are of Aristobulus *household*. 11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the *household* of Narcissus, who are in the Lord. 12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, who laboured much in the Lord. 13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. 14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brethren who are with them. 15 Salute Philologus, and Julia,

Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them. 16 Salute one another with an holy kiss. 17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark diligently them who cause divisions and scandals, saying or doing things contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned ; and avoid them. 18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly ; and by good words, deceive the hearts of the simple. 19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf : and I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil. 20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. 21 Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius and Jason and Sosipater my kinsmen, and the churches of Christ, salute you. 22 I Tertius, who wrote the epistle, salute you in the Lord. 23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother. 24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen. 25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, 26 But now is made manifest, by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith. 27 To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever and ever. Amen.

# The First Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the CORINTHIANS.

## CHAP. I.

**P**AUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes a brother,  
 2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.  
 3 Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; 5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and all knowledge: 6 Even as the Testimony of Christ was confirmed in you. 7 So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: 8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, blameless, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 God *is* faithful, from whom ye were all called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord. 10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and there be no divisions among you; but ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind, and in the same judgment. 11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by those of Chloe, that there are contentious among you. 12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ. 13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized unto the name of Paul? 14 I thank God, that I baptized none

of you, but Crispus and Gaius: 15 Lest any should say, I baptized unto mine own name. 16 And I baptized also the Household of Stephanas: Besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. 17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, to but preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be of none effect. 18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish, foolishness: but unto us who are saved, it is the power of God. 19 It is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. 20 Where *is* the wise? where the scribe? where the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? 21 For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of the preaching to save them that believe. 22 For the Jews require signs, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: 23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Gentiles foolishness; 24 But unto them who are called both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God. 25 Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. 26 Therefore ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise Men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble *are chosen*. 27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things

## I. Corinthians.

which are mighty ; 28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, to bring to nought things that are : 29 That no flesh should glory in the presence of God. 30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption : 31 That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

II. And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God. 2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified. 3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling. 4 And my speech, and my preaching *was* not with enticing words of wisdom, but in the revelation of the Spirit, and of power : 5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. 6 Howbeit we speak wisdom in perfect things : yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought. 7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, *even* that which is hidden, which God ordained before the world unto our glory. 8 Which none of the princes of this world knew : for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. 10 But God hath revealed *them* unto us by his Spirit : for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. 11 For

what man hath known the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him ? even so the things of God no one hath known, but the Spirit of God. 12 Now we have received, not the spirit of this world, but the Spirit which is of God ; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. 13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth ; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. 14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God : for they are foolishness unto him ; neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned. 15 But he that is spiritual, judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. 16 For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him ? But we have the mind of Christ.

III. And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, as unto babes in Christ. 2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat : for hitherto ye were not able ; neither yet now are ye able. 3 For ye are yet carnal : for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men ? 4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I *am* of Apollos, are ye not carnal, men ? 5 Who then is Apollos, and who *is* Paul ? Ministers by whom ye believed ; even as the Lord gave to every man. 6 I have planted, Apollos watered : but God gave the increase. 7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth : but God that giveth the increase. 8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one :  
and

## I. Corinthians.

and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour. 9 For we are labourers together with God : ye are God's husbandry, God's building. 10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wife master-builder, I laid the foundation ; another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereon. 11 For other foundation can no one lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. 12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones ; wood, hay, stubble ; 13 He that doeth this work shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire ; and the fire shall try every man's work, of what sort it is. 14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. 15 If any man's work shall be burnt, he shall suffer loss : but he himself shall be saved ; yet so, as through a fire. 16 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwelleth in you ? 17 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy : for the temple of God is holy, which ye are. 18 Let no man deceive himself with vain words. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. 19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God : for it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. 20 And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. 21 Therefore let no man glory in men : for all things are yours : 22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come ; all

are yours ; 23 And ye Christ's ; and Christ God's.

IV. Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. 2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful. 3 But with me it is a very small thing, that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment : yea, I judge not mine own self. 4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified : but he that judgeth me is the Lord. 5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come ; who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts : and then shall every one have praise of God. 6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and Apollos, for your sakes : that ye might learn in us not to *think* above that which is writ-

ten, that \* one of you <sup>\* Read, that no one.</sup> be puffed up for one against another. 7 For who maketh thee to differ ? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive ? now if thou didst receive *it*, why dost thou glory as if thou hadst not received *it* ? 8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us : and I would that ye did reign, that we also might reign with you. 9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. 10 We *are* fools for Christ's sake, but ye *are* wise in Christ : we weak, but ye strong : ye honourable, but we despised. 11 Even unto this present hour, we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted.

## I. Corinthians.

buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place; 12 And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless: being persecuted, we suffer it: 13 Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, the off-scouring of all things unto this day. 14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you. 15 For though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel. 16 Wherefore I beseech you be ye followers of me. 17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timothy, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ Jesus, as I teach everywhere in every church. 18 Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you. 19 But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them who are puffed up, but the power. 20 For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power. 21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and the spirit of meekness?

V. It is reported commonly, fornication is among you, and such fornication as is not even among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. 2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he who hath done this deed, might be taken from among you. 3 For I verily being absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, him that hath so done this deed; 4 In the name of our Lord Jesus, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of

our Lord Jesus, 5 To deliver such an one unto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus Christ. 6 Your glorying is not good: Know ye not that a little leaven corrupteth the whole lump? 7 Purge out the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover was sacrificed for us. 8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with the old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. 9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to accompany with fornicators. 10 Not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world. 11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such an one, no not to eat. 12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? 13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

VI. Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints? 2 Or do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? 3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life? 4 If then ye have judicatures of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge



## I. Corinthians.

judge who are least esteemed in the church. 5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wife man amongst you, that shall be able to judge between his brethren? 6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that with unbelievers. 7 Now there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer your selves to be defrauded? 8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that brethren. 9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, 10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. 11 And such were some of you: but ye have been washed, but ye have been sanctified, but ye have been justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and by the Spirit of our God. 12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any. 13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. 14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power. 15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? By no means. 16 Know ye not that he that is joined to an

harlot, is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh. 17 But he that is joined unto the Lord, is one spirit. 18 Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body. 19 What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? 20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body.

VII. Now concerning the things wherefore ye wrote unto me: *It is good for a man not to touch a woman.* 2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have an husband peculiar to her. 3 Let the husband render unto the wife what is due: and likewise also the wife unto the husband. 4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife. 5 Defraud you not one the other, except with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency. 6 But I speak this by permission, not by commandment. 7 But I would that all men were even as I my self: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. 8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, *It is good for them if they abide even as I.* 9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn. 10 And unto the married I command, not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart

## I. Corinthians.

depart from the husband : 11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to the husband : and let not the husband put away the wife. 12 But to the rest I speak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. 13 And the woman who hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave her husband. 14 For the unbelieving husband hath been sanctified by the believing wife, and the unbelieving wife hath been sanctified by the brother : else were your children unclean ; but now are they holy. 15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases : but God hath called us to peace. 16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save the husband ? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save the wife or not ? 17 As the Lord hath distributed to every man, as God hath called every one, so let him walk : and so teach I in all churches. 18 Is any man called being circumcised ? let him not become uncircumcised : is any called in uncircumcision ? let him not become circumcised. 19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God. 20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. 21 Art thou called a servant ? care not for it ; but if thou mayst be made free, use it rather. 22 For he that is called in the Lord, a servant, is the Lord's free-man : likewise also he that is called free, is Christ's servant.

23 Are ye bought with a price ? be not ye the servants of men. 24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God. 25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord : yet I give my judgment as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful. 26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress, that it is good for a man so to be. 27 Art thou bound unto a wife ? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife ? seek not a wife. 28 But and if thou takest a wife, thou hast not sinned ; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned : nevertheless, such shall have trouble in the flesh ; but I spare you. 29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth that both they that have wives, be as though they had none ; 30 And they that weep, as though they wept not ; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not ; and they that buy, as though they possessed not ; 31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it : for the fashion of this world passeth away. 22 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord : 33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please the wife. 34 And there is a difference also between a wife and a virgin : The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit : but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please the husband. 35 And this I speak for your own profit,

## I. Corinthians.

profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you; but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction. 36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely towards his virgin, if she pass the flower of *her* age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let him marry. 37 Nevertheless, he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doth well. 38 So then, he that giveth his virgin in marriage, doth well: and he that giveth *her* not in marriage, doth better. 39 The wife is bound as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord. 40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

VIII. Now as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth. 2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know. 3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him. 4 But as concerning the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that *there is* none other God but one. 5 For though there be that are called gods, and lords, whether in heaven or in earth, as there be gods many, and lords many. 6 But to us is one God, the Father, of whom *are* all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom *are* all things, and we

by him. 7 Howbeit *there is* not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak, is defiled. 8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, are we the better; neither if we eat not, are we the worse. 9. But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weak. 10 For if any man see thee who hast knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols? 11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died? 12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ. 13 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

IX. Am I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord? 2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye. 3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this, 4 Have we not power to eat and to drink? 5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas? 6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working? 7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth and drinketh not the fruit thereof? or who

D

feedeth

## I. Corinthians.

feedeth a flock, and eateth not of its milk? 8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also? 9 For it is written, 'Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn.' Doth God take care for oxen? 10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, it is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope. 11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, *is it* a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things? 12 If others be partakers of power over you, *are* not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ. 13 Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, live of the things of the temple? and they who wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar? 14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they who preach the gospel, should live of the gospel. 15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for *it were* better forme to die, than that any man should make my glorying void. 16 For if I should preach the gospel, I have no thanks for it: for necessity is laid upon me; For, wo is unto me, if I preach not the gospel. 17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation is committed unto me. 18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel. 19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I

made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more. 20 And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as not being my self under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; 21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law. 22 To the weak became I weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save all men. 23 And I do all things for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you. 24 Know ye not that they who run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain. 25 And every one that striveth for the mastery, is temperate in all things: Now, they *do it* to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beatech the air: 27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I my self should be a castaway.

X. For, I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; 2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea; 3 And did all eat the same spiritual meat; 4 And did all drink the same spiritual drink: For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. 5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. 6

Now

## I. Corinthians.

Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil thing, as they also lusted. 7 Neither be ye idolaters, as ~~were~~ also some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. 8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell \* three and twenty thousand. 9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. 10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. 11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall. 13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: but God *is* faithful, who will not leave you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear *it*. 14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. 15 I speak to you as to wise men: judge ye what I say. 16 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of the Lord? 17 For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we all are partakers of one bread, and of one cup. 18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar? 19 What say I then? that what

is offered in sacrifice to the idol is any thing, or that the idol is any thing? 20 But, the things which they sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons, and not to God: I would not that ye should have fellowship with demons. 21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of demons: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of demons. 22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he? 23 All things are lawful, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful, but all things edify not. 24 Let no man seek his own: but another's advantage. 25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake. 26 For the earth *is* the Lord's, and the fulness thereof. 27 If any of them that believe not, bid you to a supper, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. 28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. 29 Conscience I say, not thine own, but of the others: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience? 30 If I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? 31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. 32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God: 33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but that of many, that they may be saved.

\* Read four and twenty thousand, from Numb. xxv. 9. and Jerk. Cxxx.  
Copies.

## I. Corinthians.

XI. Be ye followers of me, even as I also *am* of Christ. 2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep my traditions, as I delivered *them* to you. 3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman, *is* the man; and the head of Christ, *is* God. 4 Every man praying or prophesying, having *his* head covered, dishonoureth *his* head. 5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with the head uncovered, dishonoureth her head; for that is even all one as if she were shaven. 6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered. 7 For a man indeed ought not to cover the head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. 8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man. 9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man. 10 For this cause ought the woman to have power on the head, because of the angels. 11 Nevertheless, neither is the woman without the man, neither the man without the woman in the Lord. 12 For as the woman *is* of the man, even so *is* the man also by the woman; but all things of God. 13 Judge your own selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered? 14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? 15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given for a covering. 16 But if any man

seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God. 17 Now in this that I declare, I praise *you* not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse. 18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it. 19 For there must be also heresies, that they also which are approved, may be made manifest among you. 20 When ye come together therefore into one place, it is not skill to eat the Lord's supper. 21 For in eating every one taketh before *other*, his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken. 22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise *you* not. 23 For I have received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus, the night in which he was betrayed, took bread. 24 And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, This is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. 25 After the same manner also the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new covenant in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me. 26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink the cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come. 27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat the bread, and drink the cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. 28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of the bread, and drink of the

## I. Corinthians.

the cup. 29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh judgment to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 30 For this cause many *are* weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. 31 But if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged. 32 But when we are judged we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. 33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another. 34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto judgment. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

XII. Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. 2 Ye know that when ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. 3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no one, by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed; and no one can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. 4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. 5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. 6 And there are diversities of operations, but the same God, who worketh all in all. 7 But the manifestation of the Spirit, is given to every man to profit withal. 8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; 9 To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; 10 To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another the interpretation of tongues; to another kinds of

tongues; 11 But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. 12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members out of one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. 13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether Jews or Gentiles, whether bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. 14 For the body is not one member, but many. 15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? 16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? 17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the smelling? 18 But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. 19 And if they were all one member, where *were* the body? 20 But now *are they* many members, yet but one body. 21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you. 22 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary. 23 And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. 24 For our comely parts have no need of honour, but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that which lacked: 25 That there should be no schisms in the body;

## I. Corinthians.

body ; but *that* the members should have the same care one for another. 26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it : or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it. 27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. 28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, but thirdly teachers, miracles, then then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. 29 *Are* all apostles ? *are* all prophets ? *are* all teachers ? *are* all workers of miracles ? 30 Have all the gifts of healing ? do all speak with tongues ? do all interpret ? 31 But covet earnestly the best gifts : And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

XIII. Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. 2 And though I have prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge ; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing. 3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing. 4 Charity suffereth long, and is kind ; charity envieth not ; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, 5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil, 6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth : 7 Covereth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. 8 Charity never faileth : but whether prophecies, they shall fail ; whether tongues, they shall cease ; whether know-

ledge, it shall vanish away. 9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. 10 But when that which is perfect is come, that which is in part shall be done away. 11 Truly when I was an infant, I spake as an infant, I understood as an infant, I reasoned as an infant : When I became a man, I put away the things of an infant. 12 Now we see through a glass darkly ; but then face to face : now I know in part ; but then shall I know even as also I am known. 13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three ; but the greatest of these *is* charity.

XIV. Follow after charity, and desire spiritual *gifts*, but rather that ye may prophesy. 2 For he that speaketh with tongues, speaketh not unto men, but unto God : for no man understandeth *him* ; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries. 3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort. 4 He that speaketh with tongues, edifieth himself : but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church. 5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather to prophesy : for greater *is* he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying. 6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine ? 7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped ? 8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle ?



## I. Corinthians.

tie? 9 So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue agreeable words, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak unto the air. 10 There are, it may be, kinds of voices in the world, and none without signification. 11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh, a barbarian; and he that speaketh a barbarian unto me. 12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church. 13 And therefore let him that speaketh in a tongue pray so that he do interpret. 14 For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. 15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with a meaning also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with a meaning also. 16 Else when thou shalt bless in the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest? 17 For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified. 18 I thank my God, I speak with a tongue more than you all; 19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words by my mind, than I may teach others also, than ten thousand words in a tongue. 20 Brethren, be not little children in understanding: howbeit, in malice be ye infants: but in understanding be perfect. 21 In the law it is written, With other tongues, and other lips, will I speak unto this people: and yet for all that, will they not hear me, saith the Lord. 22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them

that believe not: but prophecies, not for them that believe not, but for them that believe. 23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? 24 But if all prophecy, and there come in one that believeth not, or unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all: 25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth. 26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a doctrine, hath a psalm, hath a revelation, hath a tongue, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying. 27 If any man speak in a tongue, By two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret. 28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; let him speak to himself, and to God. 29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the others ask questions. 30 If it be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace. 31 For ye may all prophecy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted. 32 And the spirit of the prophets is subject to the prophets. 33 For God is not of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints. 34 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only? 35 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are of the Lord. 36 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. 37 Wherefore, brethren,

## I. Corinthians.

thren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues. 38 But let all things be done decently, and according to the constitution. 39 Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but to be under obedience, as also saith the law. 40 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

XV. Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein ye stand; 2 By which also ye are saved. Ye ought to keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. 3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins, according to the scriptures: 4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day, according to the scriptures: 5 And that he was seen of Cephas, and after those things of the eleven. 6 Afterward he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. 7 After that he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. 8 And last of all, he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. 9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. 10 But by the grace of God, I am what I am: and his grace upon me has not been poor, but I laboured more abundantly than all: yet not I, but the grace of God with me. 11 But whether I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed. 12 Now if Christ

be preached that he is risen from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: 14 Then is our preaching vain, your faith is also vain. 15 Yea, we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up. 16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: 17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. 18 Then they also who are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. 20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, the first-fruits of them that are fallen asleep. 21 For since by man was death, by man is also the resurrection of the dead. 22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. 23 But every man in his own order: Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christ's, at his coming. 24 Then is the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power. 25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. 26 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted who did put all things under him. 27 The last enemy that shall be destroyed, is death. 28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all. 29 Else what shall they do who are baptized for

## I. Corinthians.

for them, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead? 30 And why stand we in jeopardy every hour? 31 I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ, I die daily. 32 If after the manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die. 33 Be not deceived: Evil communications corrupt good manners. 34 Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame. 35 But some one will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? 36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die first. 37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or some other. 38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed its own body. 39 All flesh is not the same flesh: one of a man, another of a beast, another flesh of birds, and another of fishes. 40 *There are* also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and of the terrestrial another. 41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for star differeth from star in glory. 42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption: 43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: It is sown in weakness, it is raised in power: 44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual

body. 45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam a quickning spirit. 46 Howbeit, ~~that was~~ not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. 47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: the second man *is* from heaven. 48 As *is* the earthy, such *are* they also that are earthy: and as *is* the heavenly, such *are* they also that are heavenly. 49 And as we have borne the image of the earthy, let us also bear the image of the heavenly. 50 For this I say, Brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither shall corruption inherit incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall all arise again, but we shall not all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump, (for the trumpet shall sound) and the dead shall arise incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal put on immortality. 54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. 55 O death, where *is* thy sting? O death, where *is* thy victory? 56 The sting of death *is* sin; and the strength of sin *is* the law. 57 But thanks *be* to God who hath given us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ. 58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

## I. Corinthians.

XVI. Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. 2 Upon the first *day* of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as he hath been prospered, that there be no gatherings when I come. 3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve, them will I send with *my* epistles to bring your liberality unto Jerusalem. 4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me. 5 Now I will come unto you when I shall pass through Macedonia: for I do pass through Macedonia. 6 And it may be that I shall abide, that if I shall also winter with you, ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go. 7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit. 8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost. 9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and many adversaries. 10 Now if Timothy come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also *do*. 11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren. 12 As touching our brother Apollos, I declare unto

you that I greatly desired him to come unto you, with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time. 13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong. 14 Let all your things be done with charity. 15 I beseech you, brethren, ye know the house of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, who are the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints. 16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with *us*, and laboureth. 17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied. 18 For they have refreshed both my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such. 19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house, with whom also I sojourn. 20 All the brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with an holy kiss. 21 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand. 22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, Maran-atha. 23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. 24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

The

# The Second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the CORINTHIANS.

## CHAP. I.

**P**AUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy a brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia : 2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3 Blessed *be* God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort ; 4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them who are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves also are comforted of God. 5 For as the suffering of Christ abounds in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ. 6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer : and our hope is steadfast on your account : or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and salvation : 7 Knowing that as you *are* partakers of the sufferings, so also of the consolation. 8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life : 9 But we *had* the sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God, who raiseth the dead. 10 Who delivered us from so great a death ; in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us : 11 You also helping together by

prayer for us, that for the gift upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on your behalf. 12 For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards. 13 For we write none other things unto you, than what you read or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge to the end. 14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye also *are* ours in the day of the Lord Jesus Christ. 15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second benefit : 16 And to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea. 17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightness ? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh ? that with me there should be yes, yes, and, no, no. 18 But God *is* true, our word toward you, was not yes and no. 19 For the Son of God Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yes and no, but in him was yes. 20 For all the promises of God in him *are* yes, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us. 21 Now he who confirmeth us with you, in Christ, and hath anointed us, *is* God : 22 Who hath

## II. Corinthians.

hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. 23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth. 24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

II And I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heaviness. 2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but he who is made sorry by me? 3 And I wrote this same thing unto you, lest when I came I should have sorrow upon sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, that my joy is that of you all. 4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many tears; not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you. 5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all. 6 Sufficient to such a man *is* this punishment, which was of the many. 7 So that contrariwise, ye *ought* rather to forgive and comfort, lest perhaps such an one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. 8 Wherefore I beseech you, that ye would confirm *your* love towards him. 9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. 10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I do it also: for *if* I forgave *any thing*, it was for your sakes, in the person of Christ; 11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices. 12 Furthermore when I came to

Troas by the gospel of Christ, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord, 13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother: but taking my leave of them, I came from thence into Macedonia. 14 Now thanks *be* unto God, who always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the favour of his knowledge by us in every place. 15 For we are unto God a sweet favour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish. 16 To the one the favour of death unto death; and to the other, the favour of life unto life: and who *is* sufficient for these things? 17 For we are not as the rest, who corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

III. Do we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some, commendatory epistles to you, or commendatory *ones* from you? 2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men. 3 Ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart: 4 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: 5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to think any thing as of our selves: but our sufficiency *is* of God. 6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new covenant, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life. 7 But if the ministration of death written *and* engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the

## II. Corinthians.

the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which was to be done away; 8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? 9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. 10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, in comparison of the glory that excelleth. 11 For it that which is done away *was* glorious, much more that which remaineth *is* glorious. 12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech. 13 And not as Moses put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished. 14 But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away, in the reading of the old testament; which is done away in Christ. 15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart. 16 Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away. 17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, *is* liberty. 18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

IV. Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy we faint not: 2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every man's conscience in the sight of God. 3 But if our gospel be hid, it is

hid to them that are lost: 4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine. 5 For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and our selves your servants for Jesus sake. 6 For God commanded the light to shine out of darkness, *and* hath shined in our hearts, to illuminate the knowledge of his glory, in the person of Jesus Christ. 7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us. 8 *We are* troubled on every side, yet not distressed; perplexed, but not in despair; 9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; 10 Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus Christ might be made manifest in our body. 11 For we which live, are always delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus Christ might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. 12 So death worketh in us, but life in you. 13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken: we also believe, and therefore speak; 14 Knowing, that he who raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also with Jesus, and shall present us with you. 15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that the abundant grace, might, through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God. 16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet our inward man is renewed day by day. 17 For our light

## II. Corinthians.

light and short affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding eternal weight of glory; 18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen, *are* temporal; but the things which are not seen, eternal.

V. For we know, that if our earthly house of *this* tabernacle were dissolved, that we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. 2 For in this we groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven: 3 If so be that being unclothed, we shall not be found naked. 4 For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: inasmuch as we would not be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality may be swallowed up of life. 5 Now he that worketh us for the self-same thing, *is* God, who hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit. 6 Therefore *we are* always confident, knowing that whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from God. 7 For we walk by faith, not by sight. 8 We are confident, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with God. 9 Wherefore we labour, that whether present or absent we may be accepted of him. 10 For we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things *done* by his body, what he hath done, whether good or bad. 11 Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences. 12 For we commend not our

selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat for them which glory in appearance, and not in heart. 13 For whether we be besides ourselves, *it is* for God: or whether we be sober, *it is* for your cause. 14 For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that *if* one died for all, then were all dead: 15 And he died for all, that they who live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him who died for them, and rose again. 16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more after the flesh. 17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are past away, behold they are become new. 18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; 19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of the gospel of reconciliation. 20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech by us: we pray in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled unto God. 21 He hath made him sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

VI. We fellow-workers exhorting you, Receive not the grace of God in vain: 2 For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in a day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now *is* the accepted time; behold, now the day of salvation,



## II. Corinthians.

tion. 3 Giving no offence in any thing, that our ministry be not blamed: 4 But in all things approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, 5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings, 6 In purity, in knowledge, in long-suffering, in kindness, in the Holy Ghost, in love unfeigned, 7 In the word of truth, in the power of God, in the armour of righteousness, on the right hand, and on the left, 8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and true; 9 As unknown, and well known; as dying, and behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; 10 As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and possessing all things. 11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged. 12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels. 13 Now for a recompence in the same, I speak as unto children, be ye also enlarged. 14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? or what communion hath light with darkness? 15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel? 16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for we are the temple of the living God; for God saith, I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing;

and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

VII. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. 2 Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man. 3 I speak not this to condemn *you*: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with *you*. 4 Great is my boldness of speech toward you, great *is* my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in our manifold tribulation. 5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; without fightings, within fears. 6 Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus: 7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more. 8 For though I made you sorry with my epistle, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though but for a season. 9 I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. 10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. 11 For behold, this self-same thing that ye sorrowed after a godly

fort,

## II. Corinthians.

sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, clearing of your selves, yea, indignation, yea, tear, yea, vehement desire, yea, zeal, yea, revenge! in all things ye have approved your selves to be clear in this matter. 12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, It was not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you. 13 Therefore we were comforted. In our comfort we exceedingly the more joyed for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. 14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting unto Titus is found a truth. 15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him. 16 I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

VIII. Moreover, brethren, we make known to you the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia: 2 How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality. 3 For to *their* power I bear record, yea, and beyond their power *they were* willing of themselves, 4 Praying us with much intreaty, *that we would accept the gift*, and the fellowship of the ministering to the saints. 5 And this, not as we hoped; but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God. 6 Inasmuch that we have desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he

would also finish in you the same grace also. 7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; that ye abound in this grace also. 8 I speak not by commandment, but on account of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love. 9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich. 10 And herein I give advice: for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a year ago. 11 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as *there was* a readiness to will, so *there may be* a performance also out of that which you have. 12 For if there be first a willing mind, *it is* accepted according to that a man hath, not according to that he hath not. 13 For not that other men be eased, and you burdened: 14 But by an equality, *that now* at this time your abundance *may be* for their want, that their abundance also may be for your want, that there may be equality, 15 As it is written, He that *had* much, had nothing over; and he that *had* little, had no lack. 16 But thanks *be* to God, who put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you. 17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you. 18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the gospel, throughout all the churches: 19 And not *that* only, but he was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with this grace which is administered by us to the glory of the Lord,

## II. Corinthians.

Lord, and of your ready mind. 20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administred by us: 21 For providing to do honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men. 22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence towards us. 23 Whether for Titus, *he is* my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or for our brethren, *they are* the messengers of the churches, the glory of Christ. 24 Shewing thereby to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

IX. For as touching the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you. 2 For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many. 3 Yet have we sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready: 4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, and we, that we say not, you, should be ashamed in this same confidence. 5 Therefore I have thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your bounty, which had been promised before, that the same might be ready, as bounty, and not as covetousness. 6 But thus, He who soweth sparingly, shall reap also sparingly: and he who soweth bountifully, shall reap bountifully. 7 Every man according as he purposeth in

his heart; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver. 8 And God *is* able to make all grace abound towards you; that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work: 9 As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever. 10 Now he that ministereth seed to the sower, will both minister bread for your food, and will multiply your seed sown, and will increase the fruits of your righteousness. 11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God. 12 For the administration of this service, not only supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God; 13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorify God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men. 14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you. 15 Thanks *be* unto God for his unspeakable gift.

X Now I Paul my self beseech you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence *am* base among you, but being absent *am* bold toward you. 2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some who think of us, as if we walked according to the flesh. 3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: 4 For the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong

F

strong

## II. Corinthians.

strong holds. 5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and captivating every thought, and bringing it unto the obedience of Christ: 6 And having in readiness to revenge all obedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. 7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himself, that he is Christ's servant, let him of himself think this again, that as he *is* Christ's, even so *are* we Christ's. 8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, which God hath given for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed: 9 That we may not seem to terrify you by epistles. 10 For the epistles (says he) *are* weighty and powerful, but bodily presence weak, and speech contemptible. 11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deed, when we are present. 12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with those that commend themselves: but they *are* measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves. 13 But we will not boast of things without *our* measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you. 14 For we stretch not our selves too far, as though we reached not unto you; for we are come as far as to you also, in the gospel of Christ: 15 Not boasting of things without the measure of other mens labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to

our rule abundantly, 16 To preach the gospel in the places beyond you, not to boast in another man's line, of things made ready to our hand. 17 But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. 18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

XI. Would to God you could bear with me in a little piece of folly; and indeed bear with me. 2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you a chaste virgin to Christ. 3 But I fear lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and purity that is in Christ. 4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jesus whom we have not preached, or ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel which ye have not accepted, you would fairly suffer him. 5 For I suppose I have not been among you a whit behind the very chief apostles. 6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been thoroughly made manifest among you in all things. 7 Have I committed an offence in abasing my self that you might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely? 8 I robbed other churches, taking wages, to do you service. 9 And when I was present with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren who came from Macedonia, supplied: and in all things I have kept my self from being burdensome unto you, and will keep *my self*. 10 As the truth of Christ is in me, no man shall stop me of

## II. Corinthians.

of this boasting in the regions of Achaia. 11 Wherefore? because I love you not? God knoweth. 12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we. 13 For such *are* false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. 14 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. 15 *It is* no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works. 16 I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast my self a little. 17 That which I speak, I speak *it* not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting. 18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also. 19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye are wise. 20 For ye suffer it, if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face. 21 I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak in this part: howbeit, whereinsom-ever any is bold, I speak foolishly, I *am* bold also. 22 Are they Hebrews? so *am* I: are they Israelites? so *am* I: are they the seed of Abraham? so *am* I: 23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speak as a fool, I *am* more: in labours more abundant, in prisons more frequent, in stripes above measure, in deaths oft. 24 Of the Jews five times received I forty *stripes* save one. 25 Thrice was I beaten with

rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck; a night and a day I have been in the deep: 26 In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; 27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. 28 Besides the things that are without, that which I consider of daily, the solicitude for all the churches. 29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not? 30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities. 31 The God of Israel, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not. 32 In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king, kept the city of the Damascenes with a garrison, to apprehend me: 33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

XII. It is not expedient doubtless to glory: I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord. 2 I knew a man in Christ fourteen years ago, whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth: such an one caught up to the third heaven. 3 And I knew such a man, whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth: 4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter. 5 Of such an one will I glory: yet of myself

F 2

I will

## II. Corinthians.

I will not glory, but in mine infirmities. 6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the truth: but I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me *to be*, or *that* he hear-eth of me. 7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to buffet me. 8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. 9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. 10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong. 11 I am become a fool; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chief apostles, though I be nothing. 12 Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds. 13 For what is it wherein ye were inferior to other churches, except that I myself was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong. 14 Behold, this third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you; for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children. 15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you: the more abundantly I love you, the less I *am* beloved. 16 But be it so, I did

not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you with guile. 17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you? 18 I desired Titus, and with *him* I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? not in the same steps? 19 Again, think you that we excuse our selves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but all things, dearly beloved, *are* for your edifying. 20 For I fear lest when I come I shall not find you such as I would, and I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest *there be* debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults: 21 Lest when I come again unto you, my God will humble me, and that I shall bewail many who had sinned before, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness which they have committed.

XIII. This *is* the third time I am coming to you: In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established. 2 For I told you before, and foretell *as* being present the second time, and being absent now to them who heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again, I will not spare: 3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you. 4 For he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: For we also are weak in him, but we shall live by the power of God toward you. 5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves: know ye not your own selves,

that

## Galatians.

that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? 6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates. 7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates. 8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth. 9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, your perfection. 10 Therefore I write these things being absent,

lest being present, I should use sharpness, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction. 11 Finally, brethren, farewell: be perfect, be of good comfort, be unanimous, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you. 12 Greet one another with an holy kiss. 13 All the saints salute you. 14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

## The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the G A L A T I A N S.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead, 2 And all the brethren who are with me, unto the churches of Galatia: 3 Grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, 4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God, and our Father: 5 To whom be glory for ever and ever, Amen. 6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from me that called you into the grace of Jesus Christ, unto another gospel: 7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. 8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. 9 As we said

before, so say I now again, if any one preach any other gospel unto you, than that ye have received, let him be accursed. 10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. 11 For I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man. 12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. 13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it: 14 And profited in the Jews religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers. 15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers womb, and called me by his grace, 16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might

## Galatians.

might preach him among the heathen ; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood : 17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them who were apostles before me ; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus. 18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days. 19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother. 20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not. 21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia : 22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ : 23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed. 24 And they glorified God in me.

II. Then fourteen Years after, I went up again to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also. 2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them who were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain. 3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised : 4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage : 5 We gave place by subjection, *no not* for an hour ; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. 6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat : whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me ; God accepteth no man's person : for they who seemed to be somewhat,

in conference added nothing to me. 7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as that of the circumcision was unto Peter ; 8 For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles. 9 And when Peter, James, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship ; that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision. 10 Only that we should remember the poor ; the same which I also was forward to do. 11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. 12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles : but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them who were of the circumcision. 13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him ; inasmuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. 14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before all, If thou, a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews. How compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews ? 15 We Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles ; 16 And knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ ; that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law : for by the works of

the



## Galatians.

the law shall no flesh be justified. 17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, *is* then Christ the minister of sin? By no means. 18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. 19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. 20 I am crucified with Christ: Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. 21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness *be* by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

III. O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you? before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you. 2 This only would I learn of you, received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of Faith? 3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? 4 Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if *it be* yet in vain. 5 He therefore that ministrETH to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, is it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? 6 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. 7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. 8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, In thee shall all nations be blessed. 9 So then, they who be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham. 10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are

under the curse: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. 11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, *is* evident: For it is written, that The just shall live by faith. 12 And the law is not of faith: but, He that doth them, shall live in them. 13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: It is written, Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree: 14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. 15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. 16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, who is Christ. 17 And this I say, The covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. 18 For if the inheritance *be* of the law, *it is* no more of promise: but God gave *it* to Abraham by promise. 19 Wherefore then is the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made; ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. 20 Now a mediator is not of one; but God is one. 21 *Is* the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been

been by the law, 22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. 23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed. 24 Wherefore the law was our school-master, unto Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith. 25 But after that faith as come, we are no longer under a school-master. 26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. 29 And if ye be one in Christ Jesus, then indeed are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

IV. Now I say, The heir as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; 2 But is under tutors and governors, until the time appointed of the father. 3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: 4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. 6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. 7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ. 8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them who by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? 10 Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. 11 I am afraid of you, lest I have belaboured upon you labour in vain. 12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are: ye have not injured me at all. 13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you formerly. 14 And my temptation which was in my flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus. 15 What a blessedness yours was then? for I bear you record, that if possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have even given them to me. 16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? 17 They zealously affect you, not well; yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them: But be zealous for the better gifts. 18 *It is* good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you. 19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, 20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for I stand in doubt of you. 21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? 22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons; the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman. 23 But he of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman by promise. 24 Which things are allegorized: for these are two covenants; the one

one from mount Sinai, which begetteth children to bondage, which is Agar. 25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, for she is in bondage with her children. 26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is our mother. 27 For it is written, Rejoice thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she who hath an husband. 28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of the promise. 29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him after the Spirit, even so *it is now*. 30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond woman shall not be heir with my son Isaac. 31 So, Brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

V. Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. 2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. 3 For I testify to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. 4 Christ is become of no effect unto you; whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace. 5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. 6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love: 7 Ye did run well, who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth? 8 This persuasion *† is* of me that

called you. 9 A little leaven corrupteth the whole lump. 10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall bear *his* judgment, whosoever he be. 11 And I, brethren, if I preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased. 12 I would they were even cut off who trouble you. 13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *use* not liberty for an occasion of the flesh, but by love of the Spirit serve one another. 14 For all the law is fulfilled in you in one word, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self. 15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. 16 I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: For these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. 18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law. 19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are, Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, 20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, 21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you in time past, that they who do such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, 23 Meekness, temperance, chastity: against such there is no law. 24 And they

G

that

† *Re. d.*, is not of me that called you.

## Galatians.

that are Christ's, have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts. 25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. 26 Let us not be desirous of vain-glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

VI. Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness ; considering thy self, lest thy self also be tempted. 2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ. 3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself. 4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. 5 For every man shall bear his own burden. 6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all *his* goods. 7 Be not deceived ; God is not mocked : for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. 8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of his flesh reap corruption : but he that soweth from the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. 9 And let us not be weary in well-doing : for in due

season we shall reap, if we faint not. 10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith. 11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand. 12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised ; only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ. 13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised, keep the law ; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh. 14 But God forbid that I should glory save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. 15 For in Christ Jesus neither is circumcision any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. 16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, *and* upon the Israel of God. 17 From henceforth let no man trouble me ; for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus Christ. 18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be in your spirit, Amen.

---

The

# The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the \* EPHESIANS.

[ \* Read Laodiceans. Col. IV. 16. ]

## C H A P. I.

**P**AUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints which are at † Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus : 2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly things in Christ : 4 According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love : 5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, 6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in his beloved Son. 7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace ; 8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence, 9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to the good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself : 10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of times, he would gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, in him : 11 In whom also we have been called ; being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will : 12 That we should be to the

praise of *his* glory, who first hoped in Christ. 13 In whom ye also did so, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation : in whom after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, 14 Who is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory. 15 Wherefore I also, after I have heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, and love unto all the saints, 16 I will not cease to give thanks for you, making mention in my prayers ; 17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation, in the knowledge of him : 18 The eyes of your heart being enlightened ; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, 19 And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power towards you who believe, according to the working of his mighty power ; 20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, 21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age, but also in that which is to come : 22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him the head over all things to the church, 23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

## Ephesians.

II. And you who were dead in your trespasses and sins, 2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. 3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. 4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for the great love wherewith he loved us, 5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, by whose grace ye are saved. 6 And hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus. 7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in kindness towards us, through Christ. 8 For by his grace are we saved, through faith; and that not of our selves; *it is* the gift of God: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast; 10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained, that we should walk in them. 11 Wherefore remember that ye *were* in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands; 12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: 13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ. 14 For he is our peace, who hath

made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; 15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, the law of commandments, in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, making peace; 16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: 17 And came, and preached peace to those who were afar off, and to those that were nigh. 18 For through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father. 19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone; 21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: 22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

III. For this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Christ, am an ambassador for you Gentiles; 2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you-ward: 3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, as I wrote afore in few words, 4 Whereby when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ. 5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Holy Spirit; 6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of the promise in Christ, by the gospel: 7 Whereof I have been made a minister,

minifter, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectual working of his power. 8 Unto me, who am lefs than the leaft of all faints, is this grace given, that I fhould preach among the Gentiles the unfearchable riches of Chrift. 9 And to make all men fee, what *is* the fellowfhip of this myftery, which from the beginning of the world, hath been hid in God, who created all things. 10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wifdom of God, 11 According to the eternal purpofe which he purpofed in Chrift Jefus our Lord: 12 In whom we have boldnefs and accefs with confidence, by the faith of him. 13 Wherefore I defire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. 14 For this caufe I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jefus Chrift, 15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, 16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be ftrengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man; 17 That Chrift may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love, 18 May be able to comprehend with all faints, what *is* the breadth, and length, and height, and depth; 19 And to know the love of Chrift, which paffeth knowledge; that ye might be filled with all the fulnefs of God. 20 Now unto him that is able to perform exceeding abundantly all that we afk or think, according to the power that worketh in us, 21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Chrift Jefus, throughout

all ages, world without end. Amen. 14. I therefore the prifoner of the Lord, befeech you, that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called, 2 With all lowlinefs and meeknefs, with long-fuffering, forbearing one another in love; 3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit, in the bond of peace. 4 One body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; 5 One Lord, one faith, one baptifm, 6 One God and Father of all, who *is* above all, and through all, and in you all. 7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the meafure of the gift of Chrift. 8 Wherefore he faith, When he afcended up on high, he led a captivity captive, *and* gave gifts unto men. 9 Now that he afcended, what is it but that he alfo defcended into the lower parts of the earth? 10 He that defcended, is the fame alfo that afcended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things. 11 And he hath given fome, apoftles: and fome, prophets: and fome, evangelifts: and fome, pastors and teachers; 12 For the perfecting of the faints, for the work of the miniftry, for the edifying of the body of Chrift; 13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the fon of God, unto a perfect man, unto the meafure of the ftature of the fulnefs of Chrift; 14 That we henceforth be no more children, tofled to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, the cunning craftinefs, whereby they lie in wait to deceive: 15 But fpeaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, who is the head, Chrift: 16 From

## Ephesians.

16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together, and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love. 17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as the Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, 18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: 19 Who despairing, have given themselves over to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness and greediness. 20 But ye have not so learned Christ: 21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: 22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, who is corrupt according to the deceitful lust: 23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; 24 And that ye put on the new man, who after God is created in righteousness, and holiness, and truth. 25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. 26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: 27 Neither give place to the devil. 28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his own hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth. 29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to edification of faith: that it may minister grace unto the hearers. 30 And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, where-

by ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. 31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you, with all malice. 32 Be ye therefore kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven us.

V. Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God, for a sweet-smelling savour. 3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named amongst you, as becometh saints. 4 *Neither* filthiness, *nor* foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God. 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now light in the Lord: walk as children of light, 9 For the fruit of the light is in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth. 10 Proving what is acceptable unto God, 11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. 12 For it is a shame even to speak of those very things which are done of them in secret. 13 But all things that are reprov'd, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light. 14 Wherefore



Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and thou shalt lay hold on Christ. 15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. 17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit: 19 Speaking to your selves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your hearts to the Lord, 20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God the Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; 21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of Christ Jesus. 22 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. 23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: He is the Saviour of the body. 24 Therefore as the church is subject unto the Lord, so let the wives be to the husbands in every thing. 25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it: 26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word, 27 That he might himself present it a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. 28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own body: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself. 29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as Christ the church: 30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. 31 For this cause shall a man leave

his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. 32 This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. 33 Nevertheless, That every one of you in particular may love his wife even as himself; and that the wife reverence the husband.

VI. Children, obey your parents: for this is right. 2 Honour thy father and mother, which is the first commandment, with promise, 3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayst live long on the earth. 4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. 5 Servants, be obedient to them that are masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ: 6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart; 7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men: 8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether bond or free. 9 And ye masters do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that their and your master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with God. 10 Finally, Be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. 11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. 12 For ye wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of darkness, against spiritual wickedness in high places. 13 Wherefore, take unto you the whole armour

## Ephesians.

Armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day; and having done all, 14 Stand, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousness; 15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; 16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye are able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. 17 And the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: 18 Praying always, with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching unto him, always in supplication for all the saints; 19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto

me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel: 20 For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak. 21 But that ye also may know my affairs, how I do, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make them known to you: 22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts. 23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

## The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to the C O L O S S I A N S.

### C H A P. I.

**P**AUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy *our* brother, 2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ Jesus, who are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father. 3 We give thanks to God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you: 4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints; 5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye have already heard in the Word of the truth of the gospel: 6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, and increaseth, as also in you, since the day ye heard *it*, and have acknowledged the grace of God in truth. 7 As ye learned of Epa-

phras our dear fellow-servant, who is for us a faithful minister of Christ; 8 Who also hath declared unto us your love in the Spirit. 9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding: 10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the Knowledge of God; 11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness; 12 Giving thanks unto the Father, who hath called us to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: 13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated

lated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 14 In whom we have the redemption of sins. 15 Who is the image of the invisible God; the first-born of the whole creation. 16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. 17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. 18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence. 19 For in him all the fulness was pleased to dwell. 20 And having made peace through his cross to reconcile all things unto himself, whether things upon earth or things in heaven. 21 And you that were sometime alienated, and enemies of his mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled, 22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreprouched in his sight: 23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, which was preached to all the creation that is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister. 24 Who now rejoice in sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his body's sake, who is the church: 25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, fully to preach the word of God; 26 The mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from genera-

tions, but now made manifest to his saints: 27 To whom God would make known the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: 28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching them in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ. 29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

II. For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and them at Laodicea, and as many as have not seen my face in the flesh: 2 That their hearts might be comforted, they being knit together in love, unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; 3 In whom are all the hidden treasures of wisdom and knowledge. 4 And this I say, lest any one should beguile you with enticing words. 5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ. 6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, walk ye in him: 7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have also been taught, abounding in him with thanksgiving. 8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ: 9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. 10 And ye are complete in him, who is the head of the whole church: 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the cir-

## Colossians.

cumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ: 12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. 13 And you being dead in your sins, by the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickned, having forgiven us all our trespasses, 14 blotting out the handwriting of ordinances, that was against us, that was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross: 15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. 16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy-day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath. 17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. 18 Let no man beguile you of your reward, in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath <sup>†</sup> seen, vainly puffing up by his fleshly mind; 19 And not holding the head Christ, from whom all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. 20 If ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world; why, as again living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, 21 Touch not, taste not, handle not: 22 Which all turn to corruption by the abusing of them after the commandments and doctrines of men? 23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship and humility, and neglecting of the body, not in any

† Read  
not seen.

honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

III. If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. 2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. 3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. 4 When Christ your life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory. 5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, and uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: 6 For which thing's sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience. 7 In the which ye also walked some time when ye lived in them. 8 But now you also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. 9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; 10 And have put on the new one, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him: 11 Where there is neither male nor female, Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, barbarian and Scythian, bond and free: but Christ is all, and in all. 12 Put on therefore as the elect of God holy and beloved bowels of mercies, also kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffering; 13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as the Lord forgave you, so also do ye. 14 And above all these things, *put on* charity, which is the bond of unity. 15 And let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to the which

## Colossians.

which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful. 16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, hymns, spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to God. 17 Whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of Jesus Christ, giving thanks to God and the Father by him. 18 Wives, submit your selves unto your husbands, as it is fit in the Lord, 19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them. 20 Children, obey *your* parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing in the Lord. 21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged. 22 Servants, obey in all things *your* masters according to the flesh; not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing the Lord. 23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; 24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: ye serve the Lord Christ. 25 For he that doeth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

IV. Masters, give unto *your* servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven, 2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same. 3 Withal, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds: 4 That I also may make it manifest, as I ought to speak. 5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time. 6 Let your speech *be* alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that

ye may know how ye ought to answer every man. 7 All my state shall Tychichus declare unto you, *who is* a beloved brother, and a faithful minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord: 8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our estate, and to comfort your hearts: 9 With Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you, who shall make known unto you all things which *are* here. 10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sitters son to Barnabas, touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him. 11 And Jesus, who is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort unto me. 12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you; always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and fully assured in all the will of Christ. 13 For I bear him record, that he is in great pain for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis. 14 Luke the beloved physician, and Demas greet you. 15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house. 16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; That ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea. 17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it. 18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds, Grace *be* with you. Amen.

# The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the PHILIPPIANS.

## CHAP. I.

**P**AUL and Timothy the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, who are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons : 2 Grace *be* unto you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3 I indeed thank our Lord upon every remembrance of you, 4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy ; 5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now ; 6 Being confident of this very thing, that he who hath begun a good work in you, will perform *it* until the day of Jesus Christ ; 7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart, inasmuch as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace. 8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ. 9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and all judgment ; 10 That ye may approve things that are excellent ; that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ ; 11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glory and praise of Christ. [God.] 12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things about me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the Gospel ; 13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other *places* ; 14 And many of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my

bonds, are much more bold to speak the word of God without fear. 15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife ; and some also of good will. 16 But one preach *Christ* of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel. 17 The other preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds ; 18 What then ? notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached ; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice. 19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, 20 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but with all boldness, as always, now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether by life or by death. 21 For to me to live *is* Christ, and to die *is* gain. 22 But whether I live in the flesh, this *is* worth my while ; yet what I shall choose, I wot not. 23 But I am in a strait between two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ ; which is far better ; 24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needful for you. 25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith : 26 That your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again. 27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ : that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in

## Philippians,

one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the gospel; 28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to us of salvation, and that of God. 29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake; 30 Having the same conflict which ye both saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

II. If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies; 2 Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be unanimous, having the same love, of one accord, of one mind. 3 Do nothing through strife, or vain-glory, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than themselves. 4 Looking, not every man on his own things, but every man on the things of others. 5 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: 6 Who being in the form of a God, did not take upon him to be equal to a God: 7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: 8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. 9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: 10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth; 11 And that every tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. 12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but

now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. 13 For it is God who worketh in you, both to will and to do of his good pleasure. 14 Do all things without murmurings and disputings: 15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom shine ye as lights in the world: 16 Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain. 17 Yea, and if my blood be poured out upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoice with you all. 18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoice with me. 19 But I trust in Christ Jesus, to send Timothy shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state. 20 For I have no man like-minded, who will naturally care for your state. 21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's. 22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the Gospel. 23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me. 24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also myself shall come shortly. 25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and fellow-soldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants. 26 For he longed to see you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick. 27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

## Philippians.

sorrow. 28 I have sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the less sorrowful. 29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in reputation : 30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, exposing his life to danger to supply your lack of service toward me.

III. Finally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed *is* not grievous, but for you *it is* safe. 2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. 3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh : 4 Though I might have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more : 5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews ; as touching the law, a Pharisee ; 6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church ; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless. 7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. 8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord : for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ, 9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith : 10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings,

being made conformable unto his death ; 11 If by any means I might attain to that resurrection which is of the dead : 12 Not as though I had already attained, or am already justified, either were already perfect : but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which I am apprehended of Christ. 13 Brethren, I count not my self to have yet apprehended : but one thing *I do*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in the Lord Jesus Christ. 15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded : and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you. 16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us be unanimous : let us walk by the same rule. 17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them who walk so, as ye have us for an ensample. 18 For many walk, of whom, we have said to you often, and now tell you weeping, *they are* the enemies of the cross of Christ : 19 Whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is* the belly : and glory *is* in their shame, who mind earthly things. 20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ : 21 Who shall change our vile body, *to be* like unto his glorious body ; according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

IV. Therefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, *my* dearly beloved. 2 I beseech Euodia, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord. 3 Nay, I entreat



## Philippians.

I entreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women who laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement, with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life. 4 Rejoice in the Lord alway : again I say, Rejoice. 5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is nigh. 6 Be careful for nothing : but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God. 7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. 8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things honest, whatsoever things just, whatsoever things pure, whatsoever things lovely, whatsoever things of good report ; if *there be* any virtue, and if any praise of knowledge think on these things. 9 Those things which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do : and the God of peace shall be with you. 10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity. 11 Not that I speak in respect of want : for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, to be content. 12 And I know

both to be abased, and I know to abound : every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. 13 I can do all things through Christ who strengtheneth me. 14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction. 15 Ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only. 16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again *unto* my necessity. 17 Not because I desire a gift : but I desire fruit that may abound to your account. 18 But I have all, and abound : I am full, having received of Epaphroditus what was sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God. 19 But my God shall supply all your need according to the riches in glory, by Christ Jesus. 20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen. 21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you. 22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Caesar's household. 23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

---

The

# The First Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

## C H A P. I.

**P**AUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers, 3 Remembring without ceasing the work of your faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our Father: 4 Knowing; brethren beloved, your election of God. 5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake. 6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord; having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost: 7 So that ye are become ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and in Achaia. 8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and in Achaia, but in every place our faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing. 9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God, 10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, Jesus, who delivereth us from the wrath that is coming.

II. For your selves, brethren, **knew** our entrance in unto you,

that it was not in vain. 2 But after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention. 3 For our exhortation *was* not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile: 4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel; even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, who trieth our hearts. 5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God *is* witness. 6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome; as the apostles of Christ. 7 But we were infants in the midst of you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children: 8 So, being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us. 9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail: labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God. 10 Ye are witnesses, and God, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that believe: 11 As you know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged every one of you, as a father his children, 12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory. 13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the

## I. Thessalonians.

the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received *it* not *as* the word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe. 14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they of the Jews: 15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and have persecuted us; and please not God, and are contrary to all men: 16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles; that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath of God is come upon them to the uttermost. 17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire. 18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but Satan hindered us. 19 For what *is* our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? *are* not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus, at his coming? 20 For ye are our glory and joy.

III. Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone: 2 And sent Timothy our brother, and our fellow-worker with God in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith; 3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for your selves know that we are appointed thereunto. 4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know. 5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith; lest by some means

the tempter have tempted you; and our labour be in vain. 6 But now when that Timothy is come from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also you: 7 Therefore, brethren, we are comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith: 8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord. 9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we rejoiced for your sakes before our God, 10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith? 11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus, direct our way unto you: 12 And the Lord Jesus make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we *do* towards you: 13 To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all his saints. Amen.

IV. Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort *you* by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how you ought to walk, and to please God, as you do walk, so ye would abound more and more. 2 For ye know what commandments we delivered to you, by our Lord Jesus. 3 For this is the will of God, your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: 4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; 5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not the Lord. 6 That no one

## I. Thessalonians.

should overreach or defraud his brother in that matter : because that the Lord is the avenger of all such ; as we also have forewarned you, and testified. 7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. 8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God ; who hath also given unto you his holy Spirit. 9 But as touching brotherly love, we have no need to write unto you : for ye your selves are taught of God to love one another. 10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia : but we beseech you, Brethren, that ye increase more and more ; 11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your hands, as we commanded you. 12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and may have lack of nothing. 13 But we would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them who are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others who have no hope. 14 For if we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him. 15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them who are asleep. 16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God : and the dead in Christ shall rise first : 17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air : and so shall we ever be with the Lord. 18 Wherefore, comfort one another with these words.

V. But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. 2 For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. 3 And when they shall say, Peace and safety ; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child ; and they shall not escape. 4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. 5 For we are all the children of light, and the children of the day : we are not of the night, nor of darkness. 6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do others ; but let us watch and be sober. 7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night ; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night. 8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast-plate of faith, and love, and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. 9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath ; but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ. 10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. 11 Wherefore comfort your selves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do. 12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them who labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you ; 13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. Be at peace among them. 14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men. 15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man : but ever follow that which is good, among your selves, and to all men. 16 Rejoice evermore. 17 Pray without

## I. Thessalonians.

out ceasing. 18 In every thing give thanks : for this the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you. 19 Quench not the Spirit. 20 Despise not prophesyings. 21 Prove all things : hold fast that which is good. 22 Abstain from all appearance of evil. 23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly : and may your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 24 Faithful *is* he that calleth you, who also will do *it*. 25 And brethren, pray for us. 26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kiss. 27 I adjure you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the brethren. 28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

## The Second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ : 2 Grace unto you, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. 3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth : 4 So that we our selves boast of you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure. 5 A manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer : 6 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you ; 7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us ; when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with his mighty angels, 8 In a flame of fire, taking vengeance on them that

know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus : 9 Who shall be punished with eternal destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power : 10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that have believed, because our testimony among you was believed in that day. 11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of *this* calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of *his* goodness, and the work of faith with power : 12 That the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

II. Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together unto him, 2 That ye be not soon shaken from your meaning, or be troubled, neither by spirit, word, or letter, as by us, as that the day of the Lord is immediately at hand. 3 Let no man deceive you by any means : for it will not be except

I 2

there

## II. Thessalonians.

there come an apostacy first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition : 4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped ; so that he sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. 5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things ? 6 And now ye know what with holdeth, that he might be revealed in his time. 7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work : only he who now letteth, *will do it*, until he be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming : 9 Whole coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and signs, and wonders of a lie. 10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, in them that perish ; because they received not the love of the truth of Christ, that they might be saved. 11 For this cause God sends them strong delusion, that they shall believe a lie : 12 That they all might be judged who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. 13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of God ; because God hath from the beginning chosen us to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth : 14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. 15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold our traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle. 16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God the Father, who hath

loved us, and hath given *us* everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace, 17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish *them* in every good work and word.

III. Finally brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have its course, and be glorified, even as *it is* with you ; 2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men : for all men have not faith. 3 But God is faithful, who shall stablish you, and keep *you* from evil. 4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command. 5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ. 6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which they received of us. 7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us : for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you, 8 Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought ; but wrought with labour and travel night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you : 9 Not because we have not power, but to make our selves an example unto you, to follow us. 10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat. 11 For we hear that there are some who walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busy-bodies. 12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort by the Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. 13 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well-doing.

## II. Theſſalonians.

doing. 14 And if any man obey not our word by this epiſtle, note that man, and ſo have no company with him, that he may be aſhamed. 15 Count *him* not as an enemy, but admoniſh *him* as a brother. 16 Now the Lord of peace himſelf give you peace al

ways, in every place. The Lord *be* with you all. 17 The ſalutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epiſtle : ſo I write ; 18 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you all. Amen.

## The First Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to TIMOTHY.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Jeſus Chriſt, *who is* our hope ; 2 Unto Timothy, *my own ſon* in the faith : grace, mercy, peace from God the Father, and Jeſus Chriſt our Lord. 3 As I beſought thee to abide ſtill at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mighteſt charge ſome that they teach no other doctrine, 4 Neither to give heed to fables, and endleſs genealogies, which miniſter queſtions, rather than godly edifying, which is in faith. 5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and a good conſcience, and faith unfeigned : 6 From which ſome having ſwerved, have turned aſide unto vain jangling ; 7 Deſiring to be teachers of the law, underſtanding neither what they ſay, nor whereof they affirm. 8 But we know that the law *is* good, if a man uſe it lawfully ; 9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawleſs and diſobedient, and for the ungodly and for ſinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manſlayers, 10 For whore-

mongers, for them that deſile themſelves with mankind, for men-ſtealers, for liars, for perjured perſons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to ſound doctrine, 11 Which is according to the glorious goſpel of the bleſſed God, that was committed to my truſt. 12 And I thank him who hath enabled me by Chriſt Jeſus our Lord : for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the miniſtry ; 13 Who was before a blaſphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, for this cauſe, that I did *it* ignorantly, in unbelief : 14 But the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith, and love which is in Chriſt Jeſus. 15 This *is* a faithful ſaying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Chriſt Jeſus came into the world to ſave ſinners ; of whom I am chief. 16 Howbeit, for this cauſe I obtained mercy, that in me Jeſus Chriſt might ſhew forth all his long-ſuffering, for a pattern to them who ſhould hereafter believe on him to life everlaſting. 17 Now unto the King of ages, immortal, inviſible, the only God, *be* honour and glory, for ever and ever. Amen. 18 This charge I commit

## I. Timothy.

mit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare, 19 Holding faith, and a good conscience ; which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwreck. 20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander ; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

II. Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men : 2 For kings, and for all that are in supreme authority ; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in godliness and honesty. 3 For this *is* good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour : 4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. 5 For *there is* one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus ; 6 Who gave himself a ransom for all ; whose testimony was given in his own times. 7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, I speak the truth, I lie not, a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity. 8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and disputings. 9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety : not with broidered hair, and gold, or pearls, or costly array ; 10 But, which becometh women professing godliness, with good employments. 11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. 12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. 13 For Adam was first formed, then

Eve. 14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holiness with sobriety.

III. This *is* a human word, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach ;

3 Not given to wine, no striker, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous ; 4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity ; 5 For if a man know not how to rule his own house,

how shall he take care of the church of God ? 6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the judgment of the devil. 7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them who are without ; lest he fall into reproach, and into the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise let the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre, 9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. 10 And let these also first be proved ; and thus let them use the office of a deacon, being blameless.

11 Even so let the wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. 12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well. 13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly : 15 But if I tarry long,



## I. Timothy.

long, that thou mayst know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. 16 And without contro-

versy, great is the mystery <sup>† of the word.</sup> † of godliness :

who was manifested in the flesh, justified in Spirit, seen of angels, preached among Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up in glory.

IV. Now the spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, the doctrines of dæmons ; 2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with an hot iron ; 3 Forbidding to marry, *commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them who believe and know his truth. 4 For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving : 5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer. 6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained. 7 But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self unto godliness. 8 For bodily exercise profiteth little : godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. 9 This *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation. 10 For therefore we labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe. 11 These

things command and teach. 12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in faith, in purity. 13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. 14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by Prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. 15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them ; that thy profiting may appear to all. 16 Take heed unto thy self, and unto thy doctrine ; continue in them : for in doing this thou shalt save both thy self, and them that hear thee.

V. Rebuke not an elder, but intreat *him* as a father, the younger men as brethren ; the elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity. 3 Honour widows that are widows indeed. 4 But if any widow have children or grandchildren, let them learn first to teach their own houses piety, and to requite their parents : for that is acceptable before God. 5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, hath trusted in the Lord, and continued in supplications and prayers night and day. 6 But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth. 7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless. 8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel. 9 Let not a widow be taken into the number, under threescore years old, having been the Wife of one husband, 10 Well reported of for good works ; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed

## I. Timothy.

washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted; if she have diligently followed every good work. 11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry; 12 Having judgment, because they have cast off the first promise. 13 And withal they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busy-bodies, speaking things which they ought not. 14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. 15 For some are already turned aside after Satan. 16 If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed. 17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double maintenance, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine. 18 For the scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, The labourer is worthy of his reward. 19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, unless it be upon two or three witnesses. 20 But them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear. 21 I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. 22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sins: keep thy self pure. 23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomachs sake, and thine often infirmities. 24 Some mens sins are open before-

hand, going before to Judgment; and some *mens* they follow after. 25 Likewise also the good works are manifest beforehand; and those that are otherwise cannot be hid.

VI. Let as many servants as are under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour; that the name of the Lord, and the doctrine be not blasphemed. 2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise *them*, because they are brethren: but rather do *them* service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort. 3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; 4 He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof are begotten envyings, strifes, railings, evil surmisings, 5 Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and turning from the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: 6 But godliness, with contentment, is great gain. 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and certainly we can carry nothing out. 8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. 9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and the snare of the devil, and many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. 10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some have covered after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. 11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

## II. Timothy.

meekness. 12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses. 13 I give thee charge in the fight of God, who quickeneth all things, and Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; 14 That thou keep the commandment both without spot, and unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: 15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16 Who only hath immortality, and dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be

honour and eternal power. Amen. 17 Charge them that are the rich of this present age, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy: 18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate; 19 To lay up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on that life which is real. 20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: 21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee.

---

## The Second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle, to TIMOTHY.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus; 2 To Timothy *my* dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord. 3 I thank my God, whom I serve from *my* forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day: 4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy: 5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also. 6 Wherefore I put

thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands. 7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. 8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God; 9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began, 10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immor-

## II. Timothy.

talities to light, through the gospel : 11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. 12 For the which cause I also suffer these things ; nevertheless I am not ashamed : for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day. 13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. 14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep, by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us. 15 This thou knowest, that all they who are in Asia be turned away from me ; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus ; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain. 17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out diligently, and found me. 18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of God in that day : And in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

II. My son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. 3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good fellow-soldier of Jesus Christ. 4 No man that warreth, entangleth himself with the affairs of life ; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier. 5 And if a man also strive for masteries, he is not crowned, except he strive lawfully. 6 The husbandman labouring first, must be partaker of the fruits. 7 Mind what I

say ; and the Lord will give thee understanding in all things. 8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel : 9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil-doer, unto bonds ; but the word of God is not bound. 10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. 11 *It is* a faithful saying. For if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live with *him* : 12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him* : if we deny *him*, he also will deny us ; 13 If we believe not, he abideth faithful ; he cannot deny himself. 14 Of these things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, to the subverting of the hearers. 15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. 16 But shun profane and vain babblings ; for they will increase unto more ungodliness. 17 And their word will eat as doth a canker : of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus ; 18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already ; and overthrow the faith of some. 19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of the Lord depart from iniquity. 20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth ; and some to honour, and some to dishonour. 21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour,

## II. Timothy.

honour, sanctified, meet for the matters use, prepared unto every good work. 22 Flee also youthful lusts : but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. 23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes. 24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive ; but be an infant unto all men, apt to teach, patient, 25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves ; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth ; 26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

III. This know also, that in the last days perilous times will come. 2 For men will be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, 3 Without natural affection, truce-breakers, false-accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, 4 Treacherous, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God ; 5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof : from such turn away : 6 For of this sort are they who creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, 7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. 8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth : men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. 9 But they shall proceed no further : for their folly shall be manifest unto all, as theirs also was. 10 But thou hast fully known

my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience, 11 Persecutions, afflictions which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra ; what persecutions I endured : but out of them all God delivered me. 12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, will suffer persecution. 13 But evil men and seducers will wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived. 14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast been assured of ; knowing of whom thou hast learned ; 15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus. 16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness : 17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

IV. I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing also, and his kingdom : 2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season ; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine. 3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine ; but for their own lusts will they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears. 4 And they will turn away *their* ears from the truth, and will be turned unto fables. 5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry. 6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. 7 I have fought the good fight, I have

have finished my course, I have kept the faith. 8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, will give me at that day : and not to me only, but unto them also that love his appearing. 9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me. 10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica : Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia. 11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee : for he is profitable to me for the ministry. 12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus. 13 Bring the cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, and the books; but especially the parchments. 14 Alexander the copper-smith hath done me much evil : the Lord will reward him according to his works. 15 Of whom be thou ware also ; for he hath greatly

withstood our words. 16 At my first Apology no man stood with me, but all men forsook me : may it not be laid to their charge. 17 Notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me ; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and all the Gentiles might hear : and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. 18 The Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom ; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. 19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. 20 Erastus abode at Corinth : but Trophimus have I left at Miletus sick. 21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. 22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with us : Farewell in peace : Amen.

## The Epistle of PAUL to TITUS.

### CHAP. I.

**P**AUL a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godliness : 2 In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before eternal ages ; 3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour : 4 To Titus mine own son after the common faith ; Grace and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus our Saviour. 5 For this cause left I thee in Crete,

that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee. 6 If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot, or unruly. 7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God ; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre : 8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, without passion ; 9 Holding fast the faithful word, as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gain-sayers.

10 For

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, but especially they of the circumcision : 11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake. 12 One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians *are* alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies. 13 This witness is true : wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith ; 14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth. 15 Unto the pure all things *are* pure : but unto them that are defiled, and unbelieving, *is* nothing pure ; but even their mind and conscience is defiled. 16 They profess that they know God ; but in works they deny *him*, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

II. But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine : 2 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience : 3 The aged women likewise, that *they be* in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things ; 4 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, 5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed. 6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober-minded. 7 In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works : in doctrine, gravity, sincerity, 8 Sound Speech that cannot be condemned ; that he that is of the contrary part, may be ashamed, having no evil thing to

say of us. 9 Ye servants be obedient unto your own masters, please *them* well in all things ; not answering again, 10 Neither purloining, but shewing all good fidelity ; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things. 11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men : 12 Teaching us, that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world ; 13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ : 14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. 15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

III. Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work. 2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men. 3 For we our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, *and* hating one another. 4 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, 5 Not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing by the Holy Ghost ; 6 Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour : 7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

8 *This*

## Philemon.

8 *This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they who have believed in God, may be careful to employ themselves in honest trades: these things are good and profitable unto men.* 9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contention, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain. 10 A man that is an heretick, after one admonition, and two reject: 11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being self-condemned. 12 When I shall

send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter. 13 Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them. 14 And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful. 14 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. The Grace of the Lord *be* with you all. Amen.

---

## The Epistle of PAUL to PHILEMON.

**P**AUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ, and Timothy a brother, unto Philemon our beloved brother, and fellow-labourer, 2 And to Apphia our beloved sister, and Archippus our fellow-soldier, and to the church in thy house: 3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. 4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers, 5 Hearing of thy faith and love, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus Christ, and toward all saints; 6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus. 7 For we have had great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, Brother. 8 Wherefore though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoin thee that which is convenient, 9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such an one as Paul the

aged, and now also a prisoner. 10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds: 11 Who in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me. 12 Whom I have sent to thee: receive him, that is mine own bowels. 13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel. 14 But without thy mind would I do nothing; that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly. 15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldst receive him for ever; 16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? 17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self. 18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth ought, put that on mine account. 19 I Paul have written *it* with mine



## Hebrews.

mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides in the Lord. 20 Yea, Brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord. 21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say. 22 But withal pre-

pare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you. 23 There salutes thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus; 24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers. 25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

---

### The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the HEBREWS.

#### CHAP. I.

**G**OD, who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, 2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the ages. 3 Who being a beam of his glory, and the express image of his substance, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high: 4 Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. 5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? 6 And when he bringeth in again the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. 7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. 8 But unto the Son, Thy throne, O God, is for

ever and ever; and a sceptre of righteousness the sceptre of thy kingdom: 9 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God thy God hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. 10 And, Thou Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands. 11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment; 12 And as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed as a garment: but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail. 13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? 14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

II. Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. 2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward;

ward ; 3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation ? which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him* ; 4 God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to the will of God. 5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak. 6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man that thou art mindful of him ? or the son of man that thou visitest him ? 7 Thou madest him for a little while lower than the angels ; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands : 8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him. 9 But we see Jesus, who was made for a little while lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour ; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. 10 For it became him, for whom *are* all things, and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. 11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, *are* all of one ; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them Brethren, 12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise unto thee. 13 And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold, I and the children whom

God hath given me. 14 Forasmuch then as the children were partakers of blood and flesh, he also himself likewise took part of the same sufferings : that thro' death he might destroy [death] that hath the power of death, that is, the devil ; 15 And deliver them who through fear of death, were all their life-time subject to bondage. 16 For verily he took not hold of angels ; but he took hold of the seed of Abraham. 17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren ; that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest, in things *pertaining* to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people : 18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

III Wherefore, Holy Brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus ; 2 Who was faithful to him that made him, as also *was* Moses in all his house. 3 For he was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour than the house. 4 For every house is builded by some one ; but he that built all things *is* God. 5 And Moses verily *was* faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after ; 6 But Christ as a Son over his own house : which house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end. 7 Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith, To day if ye will hear his voice, 8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness :

9 When

9 When your fathers tried *and* proved me in that trial, and saw my works forty years. 10 Wherefore I was grieved with this generation, and said, They do alway err in heart; and they have not known my ways. 11 So I swear in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest. 12 Take heed, Brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God. 13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called, To-day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. 14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end; 15 While it is said, To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation. 16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses. 17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? *was it* not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness? 18 And to whom swore he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not? 19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

IV. Let us therefore fear, lest a promise being left of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it. 2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with the faith of them that heard. 3 For we who have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. 4 For

he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. 5 And in this again, If they shall enter into my rest. 6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in because of unbelief: 7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it was said beforehand, To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. 8 For if Joshua had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. 9 Therefore this is another rest yet to come, for the people of God. 10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from all his own works, as God from his. 11 Let us labour therefore, Brethren, to enter into that rest, lest any man fall from the same example of truth. 12 For the word of God *is* quick, and powerful, and sharper than a two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and *is* a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart: 13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things *are* naked, and opened unto the eyes of him of whom we speak. 14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast *our* profession. 15 For we have not an high priest who cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, without sin. 16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find

find grace for seasonable assistance.

V. For every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things *pertaining* to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins : 2 Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way ; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity : 3 And for that reason he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. 4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron : 5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high priest ; but he that said unto him, 'Thou art my Son,' to-day have I begotten thee. 6 As he saith also again in another *place*, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. 7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, in that he feared ; 8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered : 9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him ; 10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec. 11 Of whom also we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered ; seeing ye are dull of hearing. 12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one reach you again which *be* the first principles of the words of God ; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. 13 For every one that useth milk, *is* unskilful in

the word of righteousness : for he is still a babe. 14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, to those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

VI. Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection ; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works ; and of faith towards God ; 2 Of the doctrine of baptisms ; and of laying on of hands ; of resurrection of the dead ; and of eternal judgment. 3 And this will we do, if God permit. 4 For *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come ; 6 And are fallen away, to renew them again unto repentance : seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God, and put *him* to an open shame. 7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God : 8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, *is* rejected, and *is* nigh unto cursing ; whose end *is* to be burned. 9 But beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. 10 For God *is* not unrighteous, to forget your work of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister. 11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end : 12 That ye be not slothful,

ful, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises. 13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself, 14 Saying, Surely, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee. 15 And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. 16 For men swear by the greater: and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife. 17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath: 18 That with two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: 19 Which we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the vail, 20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, Jesus Christ; made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

VII. For this Melchisedec was king of Salem, and priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him, and Abraham was blessed by him. 2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation, king of Righteousness, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of Peace; 3 Without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually. 4 Now consider how great he was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the

spoils. 5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham: 6 But he whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises. 7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better. 8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he of whom it is witnessed that he liveth. 9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham. 10 For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him. 11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, for under it the people received the law, what further need that another priest should rise after the order Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron? 12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law. 13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. 14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priests. 15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest, 16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life. 17 For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. 18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment that was introduced: for the

weakness and unprofitableness thereof. 19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the introduction of a better hope *did*; by the which we draw nigh unto God. 20 And inasmuch as *it was* not without an oath: For those priests were made without an oath, 21 But this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. 22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better covenant. 23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death: 24 But he, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood. 25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. 26 For such an high priest became us also, holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; 27 Who needeth not daily, as the high priest, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: for this he did once for all, when he offered up himself. 28 For the law maketh men priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath which was since the law the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

VIII. Now of the things which we have spoken, *this is* the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; 2 A minister of the sanctuary, of the true tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man. 3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore *it*

*is* of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. 4 If therefore he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are that offer gifts according to the law: 5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For see, saith he, thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount. 6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry for thee, by how much he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. 7 For if that first had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for a second. 8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Judah: 9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. 10 For this *is* my covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people. 11 And they shall not teach every man his *fellow* citizen, and every man *his* brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. 12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. 13 In that he saith, A new *covenant*, he hath made

made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, *is* ready to vanish away.

IX. Then verily the first had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary. 2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first, wherein *was* the candlestick, and the table, and the shew bread; which is called the Holy of Holies. 3 And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all: 4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein *was* the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant; 5 And over it the cherubims of glory, shadowing the mercy-seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly. 6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests go always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing *their* service. 7 But into the second the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offers for himself, and the errors of the people. 8 The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, is not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle is yet standing: 9 Which *is* the first for the time now present, in which are offered both gifts and sacrifices, that cannot make him that does the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience, 10 *Being* only in meats, and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances imposed until the time of reformation. 11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, through a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; 12 Neither by

the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption. 13 For if the blood of goats, and of bulls, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh; 14 How much more shall the blood of Christ do, who through the Holy Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, who will purge our conscience from dead works to serve the living God; 15 And for this cause he is the Mediator of the new covenant, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first covenant, they who are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. 16 For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. 17 For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the testator liveth. 18 Whereupon the first covenant was not dedicated without blood. 19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wooll, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people, 20 Saying, This *is* the blood of the covenant which God hath enjoined unto you. 21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry. 22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission. 23 *It was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. 24 For Christ

Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, the figures of the true; but into heaven it self, now to appear in the presence of God for us: 25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place, every year with blood of others: 26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world; but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sins by the sacrifice of himself. 27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: 28 So Christ also was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation.

X. For the law having a shadow of good things to come, can never with those sacrifices which they offer year by year continually, purify the commers thereunto. 2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins. 3 But in those a remembrance *is* made of sins every year. 4 For *it is* not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats, should take away sins. 5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me: 6 In burnt-offering and offering for sin thou hast had no pleasure: 7 Then said I, Lo, I come, For in the volume of the book it is written of me, to do thy will, O God. 8 Above, when he said, Sacrifices, and offerings, and burnt-offerings, and offerings for sin thou wouldst not, neither hadst pleasure, which are offered by the law; 9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy

will. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second. 10 By the which will we have been sanctified, through the offering of the blood of Jesus Christ once. 11 And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can never take away sins: 12 But He, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God; 13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. 14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. 15 The Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said, 16 This *is* the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their mind will I write them: 17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. 18 Now, where remission of these *is*, *there is* no more offering for sin. 19 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus; 20 By a new living way which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, through his flesh; 21 And an high priest over the house of God: 22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. 23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering, for he *is* faithful that promised: 24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works: 25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some *is*; but exhorting: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.



proaching. 26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there is not another sacrifice left still to be offered. 27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. 28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy and tears, under two or three witnesses : 29 Of how much forer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace ? 30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompence. And again, That the Lord shall judge his people. 31 *It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. 32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions : 33 Partly whilst ye were reproached, both by abuses and afflictions ; and partly whilst ye became companions of them that were so used. 34 For ye had compassion of those in bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selves that ye have a better and an enduring substance. 35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward. 36 For ye have need of patience ; that after ye have done the will of God, ye may receive the promise. 37 For yet a while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry. 38 Now the just shall live by my faith : but if he draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. 39 But

we are not of them who draw back unto perdition ; but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

XI. Now faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. 2 For by it the elders obtained a good report. 3 Through faith we understand that the ages were framed by the word of God, so that what is seen was not made of things which do appear. 4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts : and by it he being dead, yet speaketh. 5 By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death ; and was not found, because God had translated him : for before the translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. 6 But without faith *it is* impossible to please *him* : for he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him. 7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house ; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. 8 By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed ; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. 9 He sojourned in the land of promise, as *in* a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of his promise. 10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker *is* God. 11 Through faith also the barren Sara her self

self received strength to conceive a child, when she was past age ; because she judged him faithful who had promised. 12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand of the sea, innumerable. 13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and sojourners and pilgrims on the earth. 14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country. 15 And truly if they were mindful of that from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned : 16 But now they desire a better, that is, an heavenly : wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God : for he hath prepared for them a city. 17 By faith Abraham when he was tried, offered up Isaac : and he that had received the promises, offered up his only begotten : 18 Of whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy seed be called : 19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead ; from whence also he received him in a figure. 20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau also concerning things to come. 21 By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph ; and worshipped upon the top of his staff. 22 By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel ; and gave commandment concerning his bones. 23 By faith Moses, when he was born,

was hid three months by his parents, because they saw he was a beautiful child ; and they were \* not afraid of the king's commandment. † 24 By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter ; 25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season ; 26 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt : for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward. 27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king : for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible. 28 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them. 29 By faith they passed through the Red-sea, as by dry land : which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned. 30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. 31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace. 32 And what shall I say ? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets : 33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, 34 Quenched the violence of fire, etc. ped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the

\* Omit not.

† By faith Moses, when he was become great, slew the Egyptian ; considering the depression of his brethren.

## Hebrews.

the armies of the aliens. 35 Women received their dead raised to life again : and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance ; that they might obtain a better resurrection. 36 And others had trial of mockings, and scourgings, yea moreover, of bonds, and imprisonment. 37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword : they wandered about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented : 38 Of whom the world was not worthy, they wandered in deserts, and mountains, and dens and caves of the earth. 39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise : 40 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

XII. Wherefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race which is set before us, 2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of the faith ; who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. 4 For ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin. 5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, *My son*, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. 6 For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom

he receiveth. 7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons : for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not ? 8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons. 9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, who corrected us, and we gave them reverence : shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live ? 10 For they verily for a few days chastened us, after their own pleasure ; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. 11 No chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous : nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness, unto them who are exercised thereby. 12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees. 13 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way ; but let it rather be healed. 14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord : 15 Looking diligently, that no one fail of the grace of God ; lest any root of bitterness spring up, with gall, and thereby many be defiled : 16 Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person ; As Esau for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right. 17 For ye know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected : for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. 18 For ye are not come <sup>†</sup> unto the mount that <sup>†</sup> be touched, <sup>†</sup> might <sup>†</sup> be touched, <sup>†</sup> that burned with fire, <sup>†</sup> nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, 19 And the sound

of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which they that heard entertained that the word should not be spoken to them any more : 20 For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned. 21 And so terrible was the sight, *that* Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake. 22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to holy ten thousands of angels, 23 To the general assembly and church of the first-born who are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, 24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than Abel. 25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh to you : For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more we, if we turn away from him that is from the heavens : 26 Whose voice then shook the earth : but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. 27 And this, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as those things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. 28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear. 29 For our God *is* a consuming fire.

XIII. Let brotherly love continue. 2 Be not forgetful to entertain strangers : for thereby some have entertained angels unawares. 3 Remember them that

are in bonds, as bound with them ; them which suffer adversity, as being your selves also in the body. 4 Let marriage be honourable in all, and the bed undefiled : for whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. 5 *Let your conversation be without covetousness ; Be content with such things as ye have : for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.* 6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord *is* my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me. 7 Remember them who have the rule *over you*, who have spoken unto you the word of God : whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation. 8 Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever : Amen. 9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines : for *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that walk therein. 10 We have an altar whereof they have no right to eat, who serve the tabernacle. 11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are consumed without the camp. 12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. 13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach. 14 For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. 15 By him let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit the lips, giving thanks to his name. 16 But to do good, and to communicate, forget not : for with such sacrifices God is well pleased, 17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit your

## Hebrews.

your selves : for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account concerning you : that they may do it with joy, and not with grief : for that *is* unprofitable for you. 18 Pray also for us : for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly. 19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner. 20 Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ, that great shepherd of the sheep ; through the blood of the everlasting covenant, 21 Make us per-

fect in every good work : that we may do his will ; working in us that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ ; to whom *be* glory for ever : Amen. 22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation ; for I have written a letter unto you in a few words. 23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty ; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you. 24 Salute all them that have the rule over you ; and all the saints. They of Italy salute you. 25 Grace *be* with all the saints : Amen.

---

M 2

T H E

---



T H E  
*Seven Catholick Epistles*

OF JAMES I.  
PETER II.  
JOHN III.  
JUDE I.

To which is added,

The REVELATION of JOHN:

All according to the *Greek Alexandrian MS.*  
now almost 1400 Years old, in the King's Library  
at St. *James's*.

According to the Collations in Dr. *Mills*, corrected.

---

Published by Mr. *WHISTON*.

---

The modern Distinctions of CHAPTERS, and VERSES,  
and SENTENCES, and WORDS, are here also retain-  
ed, tho' they be not in the Manuscript.





---

## The Catholick Epistle of JAMES.

### CHAP. I.

**J**AMES a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting. 2 My Brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; 3 Knowing *this*, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. 4 But let patience have *her* perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing. 5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. 6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind, and tossed. 7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. 8 A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways. 9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted: 10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. 11 For *where* the sun is risen with a burning heat, it withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways. 12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which He hath promised to them that love him. 13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither

tempteth he any man. 14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death. 16 Do not therefore err, my beloved brethren. 17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. 18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures. 19 Ye know *it*, my beloved brethren. And let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. 20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God. 21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness, and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. 22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. 23 If any one be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: 24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. 25 But who so looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *in it*, being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. 26 If any man seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own

own heart, this man's religion is vain. 27 For pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, to keep himself unspotted from the world.

II. My brethren, have not the faith of Jesus Christ our Lord of glory, with respect of persons. 2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; 3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under the footstool of my feet. 4 Are ye not then partial in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? 5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, hath not God chosen the poor of the world, rich in faith, and heirs of the promise, which he hath promised to them that love him? 6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment-seats? 7 They also blaspheme that worthy name, by the which ye are called. 8 If ye fulfil the royal law, according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, ye do well. 9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law, as transgressors. 10 For whosoever shall fulfil the whole law, and yet offend in one law, he is guilty of all. 11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. 12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. 13

For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and let mercy rejoice against judgment. 14 What profit is it, my Brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? 15 If a brother or sister be naked, or destitute of daily food; 16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what profit is it? 17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. 18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. 19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the dæmons also believe, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? 21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? 22 Seest thou how faith co-operated with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? 23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God. 24 Ye see that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. 25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the innkeeper justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? 26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

III. My brethren, be not many teachers, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation. 2 For in many things we

and judgeth the law : but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge. 12 There is one lawgiver and judge, who is able to save, and to destroy : who art thou that judgest thy neighbour ? 13 Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow let us go into such a city, and continue a year, and buy and sell ; and we will get gain : 14 Whereas ye know not what *shall* be on the morrow : What is your life ? It will be even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then also vanisheth away. 15 For that ye *ought* to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. 16 But now ye rejoice in your boastings : all such rejoicing is evil. 17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

V. Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. 2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. 3 Your gold and silver is cankered ; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and the rust shall eat your flesh as fire : ye have heaped treasure together in the last days. 4 Behold the hire of the labourers, who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth : and the cries of them who have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of hosts. 5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, ye have been wanton ; ye have nourished your hearts in days of slaughter. 6 Ye have condemned and killed the just ; he doth not resist you. 7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruits of the earth, and hath

long patience for it, until he receive the former and latter rain. 8 Be ye also patient ; stablish your hearts : for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh. 9 Grudge not one against another, my brethren, lest ye be judged : behold, the judge standeth before the door. 10 Brethren, ye have the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience. 11 Behold, we count them happy who have endured. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord : that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy. 12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath : but let your yes be yes, and your no, no ; lest ye fall under judgment. 13 Is any among you afflicted ? let him pray. Is any merry ? let him sing psalms. 14 Is any sick among you ? let him call for the elders of the church ; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord : 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up ; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. 16 Confess therefore your sins one to another, pray one for another, that ye may be healed : The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. 17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain : and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months. 18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit. 19 My brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and

## I. Peter.

one convert him ; 20 Let him know, that he who converteth a sinner from the error of his way,

shall save his soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.  
The Epistle of James.

### The First Catholick Epistle of PETER.

#### CHAP. I.

**P**ETER an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the elect sojourning in the dispersion of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, 2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ : Grace unto you, and peace be multiplied. 3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, 4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, 5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time. 6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations. 7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ : 8 Whom having not seen, ye love ; in whom though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory : 9 Receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of *your* souls. 10 Of which salvation the prophets have

enquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace unto you : 11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings for Christ, and the glory that should follow. 12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto you they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, by the Holy Ghost, sent down from heaven ; which things the angels desire to look into. 13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ ; 14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance : 15 But as he who hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation ; 16 Because it is written, Ye shall be holy, for I am holy. 17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear : 18 Forasmuch as ye knew that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, silver and gold, from your vain conversation by tradition from your fathers ; 19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and  
N 2 without

## I. Peter.

without spot : 20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in this last of times for us ; 21 Who by him are faithful unto God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God. 22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth, unto unfeigned love of the brethren ; love one another with the heart fervently : 23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth. 24 For all flesh is grass, and all its glory as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower falleth away : 25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is what is preached unto you.

II. Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and evil-speaking, 2 As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby unto salvation : 3 If ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. 4 To whom coming, a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, precious, 5 Ye also as lively stones, are built upon them a spiritual house, unto an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. 6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious : and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. 7 Unto you therefore who believe *he is* precious : but unto them who be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner. 8 And a stone of stum-

bling, and a rock of offence, who stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed. 9 But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people ; that ye should shew forth the virtues of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light : 10 Who in time past *were* not a people, but *are* now the people of God : who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. 11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul ; 12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles : that whereas they speak against you as evil-doers, they may by the good works which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation. 13 Submit your selves to every human creature for the Lord's sake : whether it be to the king, as supreme ; 14 Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him, for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well. 15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men : 16 As free, and not using liberty for a cloke of wickedness, but as the servants of God. 17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king. 18 Servants, be subject to masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. 19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. 20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently ? but if when ye do well, and suffer, ye take

## I. Peter.

take it patiently ; For this *is* acceptable with God. 21 For even hereunto were ye called : because Christ suffered for you, leaving you an example, that ye should follow his steps : 22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth : 23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again ; when he suffered, he threatened not ; but committed *himself* to him that judgeth righteously ; 24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to our sins, should live unto righteousness : by whose wound ye were healed. 25 For ye were as sheep going astray ; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

III. Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands ; that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives, 2 While they behold your chaste conversation, with fear. 3 Whose adorning, let it not be that *which is* outward, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel : 4 But the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. 5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands ; 6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord : whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. 7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs toge-

ther of the manifold grace of life ; that your prayers be not hindered. 8 Finally, *be ye* all unanimous, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, pitiful, humble : 9 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing : but contrariwise, blessing ; because ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing. 10 For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain *his* tongue from evil, and *his* lips that they speak no guile. 11 But let him eschew evil, and do good ; let him seek peace, and ensue it. 12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the righteous, and his ears *are open* unto their prayers : but the face of the Lord *is* against them that do evil. 13 And who *is* he that will harm you, if you be zealous of that which is good ? 14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy *are ye* : and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled ; 15 But sanctify the Lord Christ in your hearts : and *be* ready always to give an answer to every one that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, but with meekness and fear : 16 Having a good conscience ; that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil-doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ. 17 For *it is* better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well-doing, than for evil-doing. 18 For Christ also hath once died for sins for us, the just for the unjust ; that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit : 19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison ; which sometime were disobedient, when the long-suffering of God waited in the days of

of Noah, while the ark was a preparing ; wherein few persons, that is, eight souls, were saved by water. 21 The which figure baptism doth also now save you : not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the stipulation of a good conscience towards God, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ : 22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers, being made subject unto him.

IV. Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same mind ; for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin ; 2 That he no longer should live the rest of *his* time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. 3 For the time past may suffice to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries : 4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of *you* : 5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead. 6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to the dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit. 7 But the end of all things is at hand : be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer. 8 And above all things have fervent charity among your selves : for charity covers a multitude of sins. 9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging. 10 As every man hath received the gift, minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, as the oracles of God ; if any man minister, as of the ability which God giveth : that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ ; to whom *be* praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. 12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you : 13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings ; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. 14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy *are ye* ; for the spirit of glory and power, and of God resteth upon you : on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified. 15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as an overseer in other mens matters. 16 Yet if *it be* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed ; but let him glorify God in this name. 17 For the time *is*, that judgment must begin at the house of God : and if *it first begin* at us, what shall the end *be* of them that obey not the gospel of God ? 18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear ? 19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls in well-doing unto a faithful Creator.

V. The elders therefore who are among you I exhort, who am a fellow elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed : 2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight not by constraint, but willingly according to God,

## I. Peter.

God, not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; 3 Neither as being lords over the clergy; but being ensamples to the flock. 4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away. 5 Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto the elder: yea, and all one with another, be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. 6 Humble your selves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in the time of visitation. 7 Casting all your Care upon him, for he careth for you. 8 Be sober, be vigilant; Your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about seeking whom he may devour. 9 Whom resist

stedfast in the faith; knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the World. 10 But the God of all Grace, who hath called you unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, will make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you. 11 To him be dominion for ever and ever. Amen. 12 By Silvanus a faithful brother unto you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand. 13 She who is co-elect in Babylon, saluteth you, and Marcus my son. 14 Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace be with you all that are in Christ.

---

## The Second Catholick Epistle of PETER.

### C H A P. I.

**S**YMEON Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ: 2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus Christ the Lord, 3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us by his own glory and virtue: 4 Whereby are given unto you exceeding great and precious promises; that by these you might be partakers of a divine nature, having escaped the Corruption that is in the world through lust. 5 And do ye give all diligence, add to your

faith, virtue; and to virtue, knowledge; 6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness; 7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity. 8 For if these things be present with you, and abound, they make you neither barren, nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. 10 Wherefore the rather, Brethren, give diligence that by your good works you may make your comfort and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall not fall: 11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting



## II. Peter.

lasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. 12 Wherefore I will be ready to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth. 13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting *you* in remembrance: 14 Knowing that shortly I must put off *this* my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me. 15 Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance. 16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his majesty. 17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. 18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount. 19 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do dwell that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts: 20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. 21 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake, being moved by the Holy Ghost.

II. But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who privily will bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift

destruction, 2 And many will follow their filthinesses, by reason of whom the glory of truth will be evil spoken of. 3 And through covetousness will they with reigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lieth not, and their destruction slumbreth not. 4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to Tartarus, and delivered *them* into chains and darknesse to be reserved to be punished; 5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth *person*, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; 6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned *them* with an overthrow, making *them* an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; 7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: 8 For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day, with *their* unlawful Deeds. 9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: 10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh, in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government: Presumptuous *are they*, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities: 11 Whereas angels who are greater in power and might, bring not a railing accusation against them. 12 But these, as natural brute beasts, made to catch people and to corrupt them, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall perish in their own corruption; 13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, *as they* that count it pleasure

## II. Peter.

sure to riot in the day-time: sporting themselves with their own feasts of charity while they rejoice with you; 14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised in covetous practices: cursed children: 15 Who forsake the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bolor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; 16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with mans voice, forbade the madness of the prophet. 17 These are wells without water, and fountains that are carried with a tempest, to whom the blackness of darkness is reserved for ever. 18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that in some measure escape from them who live in error: 19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. 20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome; the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. 21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than after they have known it, to turn backward from the holy commandment delivered unto them. 22 It is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and, The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

III. This second epistle, Be-

loved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance: 2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour: 3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers in scoffing, walking after their own lusts, 4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. 5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water. 6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. 7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment, and impiety of ungodly men. 8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. 9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness, but is long-suffering for your sakes, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. 10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up. 11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in holy conversation and godliness, 12 Looking for and hastening the coming

## I. John.

coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? 13 Nevertheless we look for new heavens and a new earth, and his promises, wherein dwell-eth righteousness. 14 Wherefore, Beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent, that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless: 15 And account the long-suffering of our Lord salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you; 16

As also in all *his* epistles, speaking in them of these things: in which are some things hard to be understood; which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction. 17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know it before, beware, lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness. 18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: To him be glory, both now and for ever. Amen.

### The first Catholick Epistle of JOHN.

#### CHAP. I.

**T**HAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life; 2 For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you also that eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us. 3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. 4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full. 5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. 6 For if we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: 7 But if we walk

in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. 8 If we say we have no sin, we deceive our selves, and the truth is not in us. 9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. 10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

II. My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *those* of the whole world. 3 And hereby we know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. 4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, the truth is not in him.

## I. John.

him. 5 But whoſo keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected : hereby know we that we are in him. 6 He that ſaith he abideth in him, ought himſelf alſo to walk, even as he walked. 7 Beloved, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning : the old commandment is the word which ye have heard. 8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in us : becauſe the darkneſs is paſt, and the true light now ſhineth. 9 He that ſaith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkneſs even until now. 10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occaſion of ſtumbling in him. 11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkneſs, and walketh in darkneſs, and knoweth not whither he goeth, becauſe that darkneſs hath blinded his eyes. 12 I write unto you, little children, becauſe your ſins are forgiven you for his name's ſake. 13 I write unto you, fathers, becauſe ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, becauſe ye have overcome the wicked one. I have written unto you, little children, becauſe ye have known the Father. 14 I have written unto you, fathers, becauſe ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, becauſe ye are ſtrong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one. 15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of God is not in him. 16 For all that is in the world, the luſt of the fleſh, and the luſt of the

eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. 17 And the world paſſeth away, and its luſt : but he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever. 18 Little children, it is the laſt hour : and as ye have heard antichriſt ſhall come, even now are there many antichriſts ; whereby we know that it is the laſt hour. 19 They went out from us, but they were not of us : for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us ; but that they might be made manifeſt, that they were not all of us. 20 But ye have an anction from the holy One, and ye know all things. 21 I have not written unto you, becauſe ye know not the truth ; but becauſe ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. 22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jeſus is the Chriſt ? he is antichriſt, that denieth the Father and the Son. 23 Whoſoever denieth the Son, the ſame hath not the Father ; He that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father alſo. 24 Let that abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning, ſhall abide in you, ye alſo ſhall abide in the Son, and in the Father. 25 And this is the promiſe that he hath promiſed us, eternal life. 26 Theſe things have I written unto you, concerning them that ſeduce you. 27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you : and ye need not that any man teach you : But, as the ſame anointing teacheth you concerning all things, and is truth, and is no lie : as it hath taught you, ye ſhall abide in him. 28 And now, little children, abide in him ; that if he ſhall appear, we may have confidence and not

## I. John.

be ashamed before him at his coming. 29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one also that doeth righteousness, is born of him.

III. Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bellowed upon us, that we should be called and we are the Sons of God : therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. 2 Beloved, we are now the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be : We know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him ; for we shall see him as he is. 3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure. 4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law : for sin is the transgression of the law. 5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away sins ; and in him is no sin. 6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not : whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him. 7 Little children let not any one deceive you : He that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous : 8 But he that committeth sin, is of the devil ; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. 9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit Sin ; for his seed remaineth in him : and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. 10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil : Whosoever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. 11 For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. 12 Not as Cain was of that wicked one, and slew his brother : And wherefore slew

he him ? Because his own Works were evil, and his brothers righteous. 13 Marvel not, Brethren, if the world hate you. 14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren ; he that loveth *them* not abideth in death. 15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer ; and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him. 16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us ; and we ought to lay down *our* lives for the brethren. 17 But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him ? 18 Little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth. 19 Hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him. 20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. 21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, we have confidence towards God. 22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight. 23 And this is his commandment, that we believe on the name of Jesus Christ himself, and love one another, as he gave us commandment. 24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him : and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the spirit which he hath given us.

IV. Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God : because many false prophets are gone out into the world. 2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God : Every spirit that

## I. John.

that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God. 3 And every spirit that confesseth it not, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already it is in the world. 4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. 5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. 6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth us; Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error. 7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth God, is born of God, and knoweth God. 8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love. 9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. 10 Herein is love; not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son the propitiation for our sins. 11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. 12 No one hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. 13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his spirit. 14 And we have seen, and do testify, that the Father sent the Son, the Saviour of the World. 15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. 16 And we have known and believe the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him. 17 Herein is our

love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he has, so are we in this world. 18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love. 19 We therefore love God; because God first loved us. 20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen? 21 And this commandment have we from God, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

V. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him. 2 By this we know that we <sup>†</sup> love the children of <sup>†</sup> God, when we love <sup>are.</sup> God, and keep his commandments. 3 And his commandments are not grievous. 4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, our faith. 5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? 6 This is he that came by water, and blood, and the Spirit, Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood, and the Spirit: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth. 7 For there are three that bear record. 8 The spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. 9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God, because he hath testified of his Son. 10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath

## II. John.

hath the record in himself: he that believeth not the Son hath made himself a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son: 11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life: and this life is in his Son. 12 He that hath the Son, hath life; he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life. 13 These things have I written unto you that ye may know that you who believe on the name of the Son of God have eternal life; and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. 14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask according to his name, he heareth us. 15 And whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. 16 If any one

see his brother sin a sin not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin the sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. 17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. 18 We know that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. 19 We know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in the wicked one. 20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know the true God: and we are in him that is true, in his Son. This is the true God, and eternal life. 21 Little children, keep your selves from idols.

---

## The second Catholick Epistle of JOHN.

### CHAP. I.

**T**HE elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth; But not I only, but also all they that have known the truth: 2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever: 3 Grace, mercy, peace from God the Father, and from Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love. 4 I rejoiced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father. 5 And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we have had from the beginning, that we love one another. 6 And this is love, that we walk after

his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it. 7 For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist. 8 Look to your selves, that ye lose not those things which ye have wrought, but that ye receive a full reward. 9 Whosoever <sup>† Read transgresseth.</sup> goeth before, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine, he hath both the Father and the Son. 10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him good speed. 11 For he that bidderh

### III. John.

biddeth him good speed, is partaker of his evil deeds. 12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not do it with paper and ink; but I hope to be

with you, and speak mouth to mouth, that your joy may be full. 13 The children of thy elect shall greet thee.

---

### The third Catholick Epistle of JOHN.

**T**HE elder unto the well-beloved Gaius whom I love in the truth. 2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayst prosper, and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth. 3 For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth. 4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth. 5 Beloved, thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost, and that to the brethren; 6 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey worthily of God, thou shalt do well: 7 Because that for *his* names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles. 8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the church. 9 I wrote somewhat unto the church: but Diotrephes, who loveth to have

the pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not. 10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doth, prating against us with wicked words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth *them* out of the church. 11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God: He that doeth evil, hath not seen God. 12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself: yea, and we bear record, and thou knowest that our record is true. 13 I had many things to write, but I would not with ink and pen write unto thee: 14 But I hope I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak mouth to mouth, Peace be to thee. Our brethren salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

---

### The Catholick Epistle of JUDE.

**J**UDE the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are beloved by God the Father, the preserved and called in Jesus Christ: 2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied. 3 Beloved, when

I gave all diligence to write unto you of our common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. 4 For there are certain



certain men crept in unawares, who were of old described as coming to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord, and our Lord Jesus Christ. 5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, who once knew all things, how that Jesus having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not. 6 But the angels who kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day. 7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, in like manner with these, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the resemblance of eternal fire. 8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. 9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. 10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts; in those things they corrupt themselves. 11 Woe unto them; for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. 12 These are those who are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with them, feeding themselves without fear: clouds without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever. 14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with his holy ten thousands, 15 To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard things which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. 16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words; respecters of persons, because of advantage. 17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ: 18 That they told you there should come mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. 19 These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit. 20 But ye, beloved, building up yourselves in your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, 21 Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. 22 And reprove those that differ: 23 And others save, pulling *them* out of the fire; but of some have compassion with fear, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. 24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present *you* faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, 25 To the only God our Saviour, by Jesus Christ our Lord, *be* glory, majesty, dominion and power, before all ages, both now and ever. Amen.

# The Revelation of J O H N the Divine.

## C H A P. I.

**T**H E revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his angel unto his servant John: 2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw. 3 Blessed *is* he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophesy, and observe those things which are written therein; for the time is at hand. 4 John to the seven churches which are in Asia: grace be unto you, and peace from him who is, and who was, and who is to come; and from the seven spirits which are before his throne; 5 And from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the first-begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us, and loosed us from *our* sins in his own blood. 6 And hath made us a kingdom, *and* priests unto God, and his father; to whom *be* glory and dominion for ever. Amen. 7 Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen. 8 I am Alpha and Omega, faith the Lord God, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty. 9 I John, who am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience in Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, *for* the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus 10 I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind

me a great voice, as of a trumpet, 11 Saying, what thou seeest, write in a book, and send unto the seven churches, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamus, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea. 12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; 13 And in the midst of the candlesticks one like unto the son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. 14 His head and hairs white like wooll, as white as snow; and his eyes as a flame of fire. 15 And his feet like unto fine brasse, as burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. 16 And in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance as the sun shineth in his strength. 17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying, Fear not; I am the first begotten, and the last: 18 He that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore; and have the keys of hades and of death. 19 Write therefore the things which thou hast seen; and the things which are; and the things which shall be hereafter; 20 The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks, are the seven churches.

II. Unto the angel of the church,

## Revelation.

church, who is at Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; 2 I know thy works, and labour, and thy patience, that thou canst not bear them that are evil: and thou hast tried them who say they are themselves apostles, and are not; and hast found them liars: 3 And hast patience, and hast borne for my names sake, and hast not fainted. 4 Nevertheless, I have against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. 5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. 6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, *which* I also hate. 7 He that hath an ear, let him hear, what the Spirit saith unto the seven churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God. 8 And unto the angel who is at the church of Smyrna, write, These things saith the first begotten, and the last, who was dead, and is alive; 9 I know thy tribulation, and poverty, but thou art rich, and the blasphemy of them who say they are Jews, and are not, but the synagogue of Satan. 10 Fear not those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and may have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life. 11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death. 12 And

to the angel of the church in Pergamus, write, These things saith he, who hath the sharp sword with two edges. 13 I know where thou dwellest, where satans seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even, in those days *wherein* Antipas my faithful martyr was slain among you, where satan dwelleth. 14 But I have a few things against thee, because he hath there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac the king to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. 15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, in like manner. 16 Repent therefore; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. 17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it. 18 And unto the angel who is at Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath eyes like unto a flame of fire, and feet like fine brass. 19 I know thy works, and charity, and faith, and service, and thy patience, and thy works; the last more than the first. 20 Notwithstanding, I have against thee, because thou sufferest thy wife Jezabel, who calleth herself a prophetess, and she teacheth and seduceth my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. 21 And I gave her space to repent; and she would not repent of her fornication.

## Revelation.

nication. 22 Behold, I will cast her into prison, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they will repent of their deeds. 23 I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he who searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. 24 But unto you I say, the rest in Thyatira, who have not this doctrine, who have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I put upon you none other burden. 25 But that which ye have; hold fast till I come. 26 And he that overcometh, and observeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: 27 And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers, even as I received of my Father. 28 And I will give him the morning star. 29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the spirit saith unto the churches.

III. And unto the angel who is in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead. 2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that were ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before my God. 3 Remember therefore how thou hast received, and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. 4 But thou hast a few names in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and

they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy. 5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. 6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. 7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is true, he that is holy, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no one shutteth, and shutteth and no one openeth. 8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, which no one can shut: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. 9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will cause that they shall come, and shall worship before thy feet, and know that I have loved thee. 10 And thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. 11 I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. 12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and my new name. 13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. 14 And unto the angel of the church

## Revelation.

church which is at Laodicea, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witnesses, the beginning of the creation of God; 15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. 16 So then because thou art luke-warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth: 17 Because thou sayst, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked. 18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayst be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayst be clothed, and the shame of thy nakedness may not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayst see. 19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten; be zealous therefore, and repent. 20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. 21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. 22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

IV. After this I looked, and behold, a door opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, as it were of a trumpet talking with me; saying, Come up hither, and I will shew thee the things which must be hereafter. 2 Immediately I was in the spirit; and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne. 3 And he that sat, *was* to look upon

like a jasper, and a sardine stone; and a rainbow *was* round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald. 4 And round about the throne were twenty-four thrones; and upon the thrones twenty-four elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and on their heads crowns of gold. 5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and voices, and thundrings: And seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God. 6 And before the throne as a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, four animals full of eyes before and behind. 7 And the first animal *was* like a lion, and the second animal like a calf, and the third animal had a face as of a man, and the fourth animal *was* like a flying eagle. 8 And the four animals had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within; and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come. 9 And when those animals give glory and honour, and thanks to him that sits on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever, 10 The twenty-four elders will fall down before him that sits on the throne, and will worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and will cast their crowns before the throne, saying, 11 Thou art worthy, O our Lord and God, to receive glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they were.

V. And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside, sealed with seven seals. 2 And I saw a strong

## Revelation.

strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who *is* worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof? 3 And no one in heaven, nor on earth; neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. 4 And I wept much, because no one was found worthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look thereon. 5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and the seven seals thereof. 6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst also of the throne, and of the four animals, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. 7 And he came and took *the book* out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne. 8 And when he had taken the book, the four animals, and twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them an harp, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the saints. 9 And they sing a new song, saying, That thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed *them* to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; 10 And hast made them a kingdom and priests: and they shall reign on the earth. 11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the animals, and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; 12 Saying with a loud voice, Wor-

thy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing. 13 And every creature which *is* in heaven, and on the earth, and such as *are* in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, *and* unto the Lamb for ever and ever! 14 And the four animals said, Amen. And the elders fell down and worshipped.

VI. And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seven seals; and I heard, as it were with the noise of thunder, one of the four animals, saying, Come. 2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given unto him, and the conqueror went forth to conquer also. 3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second animal say, Come. 4 And there went out another horse red: and it was given to him that sat on him, to take peace from the earth; and they will kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword. 5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third animal say, Come. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. 6 And I heard as a voice in the midst of the four animals say, A chænix of wheat for a denarius, and three chænixes of barley for a denarius; and be thou not unjust in the oyl, and the wine. 7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth animal say, Come. 8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse; and his

## Revelation.

his name that sat on him was Death, and Hades followed with him : and power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth ; to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the fourth part of the wild beasts of the earth. 9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and the testimony which they held. 10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth ? 11 And a white robe was given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they *were*, should be fulfilled. 12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the whole moon became as blood : 13 And the stars of God fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind : 14 the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together ; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places : 15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the chief captains, and the rich men, and the strong men, and every bond-man and free-man hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains ; 16 And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb : 17 For the great day of his

wrath is come ; and who shall be able to stand ?

VII. After this, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on the tree. 2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God : and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, 3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we shall have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. 4 *There were* sealed, an hundred forty four thousand, of all the tribes of Israel. 5 Of the tribe of Juda *were* sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand. 6 Of the tribe of Aser twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthalim twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses twelve thousand. 7 Of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand. 8 Of the tribe of Zabulon twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand. 9 After this I beheld a great multitude, and no man could number them, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, standing before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands ; 10 And they cry with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb. 11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and the elders, and the four animals, and

and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, 12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might *be* unto our God for ever and ever. Amen. 13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they? 14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they who come out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. 15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. 16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. 17 For the Lamb that is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters of life: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

VIII. And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour. 2 And I saw the seven angels who stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets. 3 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer *it* with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. 4 And the smoke of the incense with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God, out of the angels hand. 5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the

earth: and there were thundrings, and lightnings, and voices, and an earthquake. 6 And the seven angels who had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound. 7 And the first sounded, and there was hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of the earth was burnt up, and the third part of the trees, and all the green grass was burnt up. 8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood: 9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed. 10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers. 11 And the name of the star is called wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters because they were made bitter. 12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a fourth part of it, and the night likewise. 13 And I beheld, and heard an eagle flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

IX. And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the pit



## Revelation.

pit of the abyſs. 2 And he opened the pit of the abyſs, and there aroſe a ſmoke out of the pit, the ſmoke of a great furnace; and the ſun and the air were darkned, by reaſon of the ſmoke of the pit. 3 And there came out of the ſmoke locuſts upon the earth; and unto them was given power, as the ſcorpions of the earth have power. 4 And it was commanded them that they ſhould not hurt the graſs of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but thoſe men who have not the ſeal of God upon *their* foreheads. 5 And it was given to them that they ſhould not kill them, but they ſhall be tormented five months: and their torment *was* as the torment of a ſcorpion, when he ſtriketh a man. 6 And in thoſe days ſhall men ſeek death, and by no means find it; and ſhall deſire to die, and death ſhall fly from them. 7 And the ſhapes of the locuſts *were* like unto horſes prepared unto battle; and on their heads as it were crowns like gold, and their faces as the faces of men. 8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as thoſe of lions. 9 And they had breſtplates, as it were breſtplates of iron; and the ſound of their wings *was* as the ſound of chariots of many horſes running to battle. 10 And they had tails like unto ſcorpions, and there were ſtings in their tails: and in their tails their power was to hurt men five months. 11 They had a king over them, the angel, the prince of the bottomleſs pit, whoſe name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath *his* name Apollyon: [The Deſtroyer.] 12 One wo is paſt, behold there

come two woes more hereafter. 13 And the ſixth angel ſounded, and I heard a voice from the horns of the golden altar, which is before God. 14 Saying to the angel who had the trumpet, looſe the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates. 15 And the four angels were looſed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to ſlay the third part of men. 16 And the number of the armies of the horſemen *were* two hundred thouſand thouſand: I heard the number of them. 17 And thus I ſaw the horſes in the viſion, and them that ſat on them, having breſtplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimſtone: and the heads of the horſes as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths iſſued fire, and ſmoke, and brimſtone. 18 By theſe three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the ſmoke, and by the brimſtone, which iſſued out of their mouths. 19 For the power of the horſes is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails *were* like unto ſerpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt. 20 And the reſt of the men who were not killed by theſe plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they ſhould not worſhip dæmons, and idols of gold, and ſilver, and braſs, and ſtone, and wood: which neither can ſee, nor hear, nor walk: 21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their ſorceries, nor of their wickedneſs, nor of their thefts.

X. And I ſaw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow upon his head, and his face as it were the ſun, and his feet as  
pillars

## Revelation.

pillars of fire. 2 And having in his hand a little book: And he set his right foot upon the sea, and left upon the earth, 3 And cried with a loud voice, as a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices. 4 And when the seven thunders had uttered, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, saying, seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not. 5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven, 6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that are in them, that there should be no longer time. 7 But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall be about to sound, the mystery of God is finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets. 8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go, take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth. 9 And I went unto the angel, and spake unto him, to give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take and eat it up; and it shall make thy heart bitter, but it shall be sweet in thy mouth. 10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as hony: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter. 11 And they say unto me, thou must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings. XI. And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: saying, ifc, and measure the temple of

God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. 2 But the court which is without the temple cast out, and measure it not: for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they measure forty and two months. 3 And I will give unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred threescore days clothed in sackcloth. 4 These are the two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the Lord of the earth. 5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must be killed. 6 These have the power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophesy: and have power over the waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with every plague, as often as they will. 7 And when they shall be near finishing their testimony, the fourth wild beast that ascendeth out of the abyss shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. 8 And their dead body shall be in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also their Lord was crucified. 9 And they of the people, and kindreds and tongues, and nations, see their dead body three days and an half, and do not suffer their dead body to be put in a grave. 10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another: because these two prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth. 11 And after three days and an half, the Spirit of life from God entred into them: and they stood upon their feet,

Q

## Revelation.

feet, and great fear fell upon them who saw them. 12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them. 13 And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain names of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven. 14 The second wo is past; behold, the third wo cometh quickly. 15 And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdom of this world is become the kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever. 16 And the twenty-four elders who sit before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, 17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God almighty, who art, and wast; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned. 18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, to destroy them who destroy the earth. 19 And the temple of God was opened, which is in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his covenant: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

XII. And there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon

her head a crown of twelve stars: 2 And she being with child, cried, *and* travelling in birth, was pained to be delivered. 3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns, and seven crowns were upon their head. 4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman, who was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. 5 And she brought forth a man-child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and unto his throne. 6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place there prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred threescore days. 7 And there was war in heaven; and Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels: 8 And he prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven. 9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice in heaven saying, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast out, who accused them before our God day and night. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. 12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and

ye

## Revelation.

ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea : for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. 13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man *child*. 14 And to the woman were given the two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place : where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. 15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth after the woman water as a flood, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. 16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the water, which the dragon cast out of his mouth. 17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus.

XIII. And he stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a wild beast rise up out of the sea, having seven horns, and ten heads, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads names of blasphemy. 2 And the wild beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as those of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion : and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and gave him great authority. 3 And one of his heads, was, as it were, wounded to death ; and his deadly wound was healed : and all the world wondred after the wild beast. 4 And they worshipped

the dragon, because he gave power unto the wild beast : and they worshipped the wild beast, saying, Who *is* like unto the wild beast ? and who is able to make war with him ? 5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies ; and power was given unto him to continue forty two months. 6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. 7 And power was given him over every tribe and people, and tongue, and nation. 8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose name is *not* written in the book of life of the slain Lamb, from the foundation of the world. 9 If any man have an ear, let him hear. 10 If any one *leader* into captivity, he goeth into captivity : he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. 11 And I beheld another wild beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. 12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first wild beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them who dwell therein, to worship the first wild beast, whose deadly wound was healed. 13 And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth, in the sight of men. 14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the wild beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the wild beast who had the wound by a sword, and did live.

## Revelation.

15 And he had power to give life unto the image of the wild beast, that the image of the wild beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the wild beast, should be killed. 16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, that he may give them a mark in their right hand, or in the forehead: 17 And that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, the name of the beast, or the number of his name. 18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is 666.

XIV. And I looked, and lo, a Lamb standing on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty thousand, having his name and his Father's name written upon their foreheads. 2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and the voice which I heard was of harpers harping with their harps: 3 And they sang as it were a new song, before the throne, and before the four animals, and the elders: and no man could learn that song, but the hundred forty thousand, who were redeemed from the earth. 4 These are not defiled with women; for they are virgins: these are they that follow the lamb whithersoever he goeth: these were redeemed from among men, first-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb. 5 And in their mouth was found no lye. They are without fault. 6 And I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to

every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people. 7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea and the fountains of waters. 8 And there followed a second angel, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen; who made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. 9 And another third angel followed him, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the wild beast and his image, and receive the mark in his forehead, or in hand, 10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is without mixture, the indignation poured out of the cup, and they shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: 11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up forever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worshipped the wild beast, and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. 12 Here is the patience of the saints, that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus. 13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying, Write, Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord, from henceforth: Yes, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow them. 14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat, like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. 15 And another angel came out, crying out of the temple, with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust

## Revelation.

Thrust in thy sickle, and reap : for the hour is come to reap ; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. 16 And he that sat on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth ; and the earth was reaped. 17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. 18 And another angel came out from the altar, who had power over fire : and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth ; for her grapes are fully ripe. 19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great wine-press of the wrath of God. 20 And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-press, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand six hundred furlongs.

XV. And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God. 2 And I saw as it were a sea of glass, mingled with fire ; and them that had gotten the victory over the wild beast, and over his image, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. 3 And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God almighty ; just and true are thy ways, thou King of nations. 4 Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name ? for thou only art holy : for all nations shall come and worship before thee ; for thy judgments are made manifest, O Lord. 5

And after that I looked, and the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened : 6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, who had the seven plagues, clothed in pure shining linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. 7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever. 8 And the Temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power ; and no one was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

XVI. And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the seven vials of the wrath of God upon the earth. 2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth ; and there fell a noisom and wicked sore upon the men who had the mark of the beast, and them who worshipped his image. 3 And the second poured out his vial upon the sea ; and it became as the blood of a dead man : and every living soul died that was in the sea : 4 And the third poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters ; and they became blood. 5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, who art, and wast, the Holy one, because thou hast judged thus : 6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink ; they are worthy. 7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments. 8 And the fourth poured out his vial upon the

## Revelation.

the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. 9 And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed before God, who had power over these plagues: and they repented not, to give him glory. 10 And the fifth poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain, 11 And blasphemed the God of heaven, because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds. 12 And the sixth poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. 13 And I saw three unclean spirits as frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. 14 For they are the spirits of devils working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of the great day of God almighty. 15 Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. 16 And he gathered them together unto a river, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon. 17 And the seventh poured out his vial into the air; and there came a voice out of the temple from the throne, saying, It is done. 18 And there were lightnings, voices, and thunders, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since man was upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, so great. 19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell:

and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath. 20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. 21 And there fell upon the men a great hail out of heaven, about the weight of a talent: and the men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

XVII. And there came out one of the seven angels who had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters: 2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. 3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns. 4 And the woman was arrayed in purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stone, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication. 5 And upon her forehead *was* a name written, MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. 6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. 7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman,

## Revelation.

woman, and of the wild beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns. 8 The wild beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the abyss, and goes into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and shall come. 9 And here is the mind which hath wisdom, The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. 10 And they are seven kings: five are fallen, one is, the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. 11 And the wild beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. 12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the wild beast. 13 These have one mind, and give their power and strength unto the wild beast. 14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful. 15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. 16 And the ten horns which thou sawest and the wild beast, these shall hate the whore, and make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. 17 For God hath put into their hearts to fulfil his will, and to give their kingdom unto the wild

beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. 18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

XVIII. After these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. 2 And he cried with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of demons, and the hold of every unclean and hateful spirit; and a cage of every unclean and hateful wild beast. 3 For all nations have drunk of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies, 4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues: 5 For her sins have adhered unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. 6 Reward her even as she hath rewarded, and double double, according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double. 7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, that I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. 8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire: for strong is God who hath judged her. 9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail and lament for her, when they



## Revelation.

they shall see the smoke of her burning, 10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for one hour is thy judgment. 11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merchandise any more: 12 The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and every vessel of ivory, and every vessel of most precious stone, and of brass and iron, and marble, 13 And cinnamon, and amomum, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. 14 And the fruit of the desire of thy soul is departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are perished from thee, and they shall find them no more at all. 15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for fear of her torment, weeping and mourning, 16 Saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in purple, and scarlet, and fine linen, and decked with gold and precious stones, and pearl: 17 For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and every one that sails unto the place, and mariners, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, 18 And cried, when they saw the place of her burning, saying, What is like unto this great city? 19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea,

by reason of her costliness: for in one hour is she made desolate. 20 Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and the saints and the apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her. 21 And an angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. 22 And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; 23 And the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy forceries were all nations deceived: 24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

XIX. After these things I heard as it were a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, The power and glory of our God: 2 For true and righteous are his judgments; for he hath judged the great whore who did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand. 3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever. 4 And the twenty-four elders, and the four animals fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia. 5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, small and great. 6 And I heard the voice

of

## Revelation.

of a great multitude, and the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. 7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready. 8 And to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linen, shining and clean: for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints. 9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These sayings are the true sayings of God. 10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. 11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him faithful and true, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. 12 His eyes as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written that no one knew but he himself: 13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood: and his name hath been called, The Word of God. 14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, but clothed in white linen, and clean. 15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness of the wrath of almighty God. 16 And he hath on his thigh a name writ-

ten, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. 17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come, gather your selves together unto the great supper of God; 18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great. 19 And I saw the wild beast, and the kings of the earth, and his armies gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. 20 And the wild beast was taken, and those with him, the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the wild beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. 21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which proceeded out of his mouth: And all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

XX. And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the abyss, and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. 3 And cast him into the abyss, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: after that he must be loosed a little season. 4 And I saw thrones, and they

R

sat

## Revelation.

sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and the souls of them that had been conquered in war, for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the wild beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon *their* forehead, and in their hand; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. 5 The rest of the dead lived not until the thousand years were finished. This *is* the first resurrection. 6 Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and they reign with him a thousand years. 7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. 8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of them, as the sand of the sea. 9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down out of heaven, and devoured them. 10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where both the wild beast and the false prophet *were*, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. 11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. 12 And I saw the dead, the great and the small, stand before the throne; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which *is* that of

life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. 13 And the sea gave up the dead, those that were in it; and death and hades delivered up the dead, those that were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. 14 And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire: This is the second death, the lake of fire. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

XXI. And I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and I saw the sea no longer. 2 And I saw the holy new Jerusalem, coming down from heaven, from God: prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. 3 And I heard a great voice out of the throne, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself will be with them, *and be* their God. 4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: The former things are passed away. 5 And he that sat upon the throne, said, Behold also, I make all things new. And he said Write: for these words are faithful and true. 6 And he said unto me, They are done, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: I will give unto him that is athirst, of the water of life freely. 7 He that overcometh shall inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. 8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the

## Revelation.

the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and forcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. 9 And there came one of the seven angels, who had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. 10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. 11 Her light *was* like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; 12 Having a wall great and high, having twelve gates; and names written thereon, which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel. 13 On the east, three gates; and on the north, three gates, and on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates. 14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and upon them the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. 15 And he that talked with me, had a measuring reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. 16 And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal. 17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred *and* forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. 18 And the building of the wall of it *was* of jasper; and the city pure gold, *and* like unto clear glass. 19 The foundations of

the wall of the city *were* garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation a jasper; the second, a sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; 20 The fifth, a sardonyx; the sixth a sardius; the seventh, a chrysolite; the eighth, a beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysopterus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. 21 And the twelve gates twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city *was* pure gold, as it were transparent glass. 22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God almighty, *and* the Lamb, are the temple of it. 23 And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb *is* the light thereof. 24 And the nations shall walk *by* the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory unto it. 25 And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day. for there shall be no night there. 26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. 27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any common thing, neither *that* worketh abomination, or a lie: but they who are written in the Lamb's book of life.

XXII. And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb. 2 In the midst of the street of it, and on this side and on that side of the river, the tree of life, which bare twelve fruits, yielding her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree for the healing of the nations. 3 And there shall be no more curse: but the

## Revelation.

the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him. 4 And they shall see his face; and his name *shall be* in their foreheads. 5 And there shall be no night any more, and they shall not have need of the light of a candle, and the light of the sun; for the Lord God will give them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. 6 And he said unto me, These sayings *are* faithful and true. And the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets hath sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. 7 And behold, I come quickly: blessed *is* he that observeth the words of the prophesy of this book. 8 And I John *am he* who heard and saw these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, who shewed me these things. 9 Then saith he unto me, See *thou do it* not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them who observe the words of this book: worship God. 10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophesy of this book: for the time is at hand. 11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he that is righteous, let him do righteousness still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. 12 Behold, I come quickly; and my

reward *is* with me, to give every man according as his work is. 13 I *am* Alpha and Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. 14 Blessed *are* they that wash their garments, that they may have power over the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. 15 Without *are* dogs, and forcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. 16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the off-spring of David, the bright and morning star. 17 And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. Let him that is athirst, come: And he that will, let him take the water of life freely. 18 I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophesy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add the plagues that are written in this book: 19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophesy, God shall take away his part out of the tree of life, and out of the holy city, *and* the things which are written in this book. 20 He that testifieth these things, saith, I come quickly. Amen. Come Lord Jesus. 21 The grace of the Lord Jesus *be* with you all.

## F I N I S.

# Of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, according to BEZA's double Copy of the four Gospels and Acts of the Apostles.

**I**N order to state this most important Fact, which has very lately been called in Question, and that after the most authentick Manner I am able, I shall first set down the intire Accounts given us by all the four Evangelists, out of this most ancient MS in parallel Columns, with Passages out of Acts I. the 1 Corinth. xv. and the Apostolical Constitutions, L. V. VIII. Only minding the Reader beforehand, *That* the Order of the Gospels in this MS, is according to the original Order in the Apostles first Directions for reading them in publick: Constitution II. 57. Matthew. John. Luke. Mark. *That* Matthew wrote his Gospel in Greek, about A. D. 53. *That* Mark was the Son of Peter, and abridged Matthew's Gospel, as far as Chap. xvi. 8. (where the original Copy ended;) about A. D. 58. and *that* the following 12 Verses are additional, and written most probably by his Father Peter himself, sometime afterwards. *That* Luke wrote his Gospel about A. D. 54, and so before Mark wrote his, and had never seen so much as Matthew's, much less Mark's Gospel, when he wrote his own. *That* John saw the other three Gospels before he wrote his, and wrote the former 20th Chapters about A. D. 63. and added the 21st Chapter a little before he died, or about A. D. 99. *That* the Jews interpolated the Copies of the Old Testament, soon after the Beginning of the second Century, when they changed the Characters from the old Hebrew, the Samaritan, to the present Chaldee, upon their setting up their spurious Messiah or Barchocab, in Opposition to their true One, Jesus of Nazareth. And *That* the Old Hereticks, the followers of Simon Magus, frequently interpolated the Copies of the Books of the New Testament; which they put into the Hands of the Catholick Christians, in order to confound them. And *that*, by Consequence, Beza's double Copy, which is far more ancient than any of the rest, and I think, written at the latest within 30 Years of the Death of John the Apostle, must be much more uncorrupt and free from such Interpolations than the later Copies can be supposed to be. All which Assertions that are not already proved, will be fully proved in my large Work now in the Press.

<i>Matthew</i> XXVII.	<i>John</i> XIX.	<i>Luke</i> XXIII.	<i>Mark</i> XV.
55. And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.	38. And after this, Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly, for fear of the Jews, besought Pilate that he might take away the body	49. And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee; stood afar off, beholding these things.	40. There were women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalen, and Mary the Mother of James the less, and of Joseph,
56. Among whom was Mary	that he might take away the body	50. And behold	

*Matthew*  
XXVII.

ry Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

57. When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus's disciple.

58. He went to Pilate and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth.

60. And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

61. And there was Mary Magdalen, and the other Mary, sitting over against the Sepulchre.

62. Now the next day that followed

*John*  
XIX.

body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave: and he came and took the body of Jesus.

39. And there came also Nicodemus, who at the first came to Jesus by Night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred litræ.

40. Then took they the body of Jesus and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41. Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden: and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was man never yet laid.

42. There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation: for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

## XX.

1. The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalen early, while it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre; and seeth

*Luke*  
XXIII.

hold one named Joseph, a counsellor, a good man and a just.

51. He had not consented to the counsel and deed of them. He was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who waited for the kingdom of God.

52. He went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53. And he took down and wrapped the body of Jesus in linen; and laid him in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never any one before was laid. And when he had laid him; he put to the sepulchre a stone, which twenty men could hardly roll.

54. And it was the day before the sabbath.

55. And two women also followed from Galilee, and beheld his sepulchre.

56. And they returned and prepared spices and ointments, and rested

*Mark.*  
XIV.

Joseph, and Salome:

41. Who also when he was in Galilee followed him: and many other women who came up with him: unto Jerusalem.

42. And now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath.

43. Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor who also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went boldly unto Pilate, and craved the Body of Jesus.

44. And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead. And calling unto him the Centurion, he asked him, Whether he were already dead.

45. And when he knew it of the Centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46. Now Joseph had bought fine linen, and he took him, and wrapped

*Matthew*  
XXVII.

followed the day of the preparation, the chief Priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

63. Saying, Sir, We remember that that deceiver said while he was yet alive, that after three days I will rise again.

64. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead. So the last error will be worse than the first.

65. Pilate saith unto them, Ye have a watch; go your way; make it as sure as you can.

66. So they went and made the sepulchre sure; sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

## XXVIII.

1. In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalen

*John*  
XX.

seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.

2. Then she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other Disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

3. Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, & came to the sepulchre.

4. So they ran both together: and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5. And he stooping down saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

6. Then cometh Simon Peter also following, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie;

7. And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but

*Luke*  
XXIII.

rested the sabbath day.

## XXIV.

1. But upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing what they had prepared, and certain with them.

2. But they reasoned among themselves, who now shall roll away the stone? but they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3. And they entered in, and found not the body.

4. And it came to pass as they were perplexed about it, behold two men stood by them in a shining garment.

5. And they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth. But they said unto them, Why seek ye him that is alive among the dead?

6. Remember how many things he spake unto you,

*Mark*  
XV.

wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn in a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

47. And Mary Magdalen, & Mary the mother of James, beheld the place where he was laid.

## XVI.

1. And they went and bought sweet spices, that they might anoint him.

2. And early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre, at the rising of the Sun.

3. And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the sepulchre? for it was very great.

4. And when they looked, they came and find the stone rolled away.

5. And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side,



<i>Matthew</i> XXVIII.	<i>John</i> XX.	<i>Luke</i> XXIV.	<i>Mark</i> XVI.
<p>dalén, and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.</p> <p>2. And behold there was a great earthquake: for an Angel of the Lord descended from Heaven, and came, and rolled back the stone, and sat upon it.</p> <p>3. His countenance was like lightening; and his raiment white as snow.</p> <p>4. And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.</p> <p>5. And the Angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye, for I know that ye seek Jesus who was crucified.</p> <p>6. He is not here, for he is risen, as he said; come, see the Place where the Lord lay.</p> <p>7. And go quickly and tell his disciples, that he is risen: and behold he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him. I have told you.</p> <p>8. And</p>	<p>but wrapped together in a place by itself.</p> <p>8. Then went in that other disciple who came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed not.</p> <p>9. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.</p> <p>10. Then the disciples went away again unto their own homes.</p> <p>11. But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping; and as she wept, she stooped down unto the sepulchre.</p> <p>12. And seeth two Angels, the one at the head, and the other at the feet where the body of Jesus had lain.</p> <p>13. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord; and I know not where they have laid him.</p> <p>14. When she had</p>	<p>you, when he was with you in Galilee.</p> <p>7. The son of man must be delivered into the hands of Men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.</p> <p>8. And they remembered his words.</p> <p>9. And returned, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.</p> <p>10. Mary Magdalen, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women with them, told these things unto the Apostles.</p> <p>11. And these words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.</p> <p>13. But there were two of them who went that same day to a Village, whose name was Onan-maus, which was from Jerusalem threescore furlongs.</p> <p>14. And they talked together of all these things which had happened.</p> <p>15. And it came</p>	<p>side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.</p> <p>6. And the Angel saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.</p> <p>7. But go your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that I go before you into Galilee; there shall ye see me, as I said unto you.</p> <p>8. And they went out, and fled from the sepulchre; for they feared and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.</p> <p>9. Now when he was risen early the first day of the week, he made himself known first to Mary Magdalen, out of whom he had cast seven Demons.</p> <p>10. She went and told them that</p>

*Matthew*  
XXVIII.

8. And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy : and ran to bring his disciples word.

9. And behold Jesus met them, saying, All hail ! And they came and held him by the feet, and worshiped him.

10. Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid : Go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall ye see me.

11. Now when they were going, behold some of the watch came into the city, and related unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers,

13. Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away, while we slept.

14. And if this come to the governor's

*John*  
XX.

had thus said, she turned herself back and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? whom seekest thou ? She supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, If thou hast taken him away, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16. Jesus saith unto her, Mary. But she turned herself back, and saith unto him, Rabboni ; which is to say, Lord, Master.

17. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not ; for I am not yet ascended to the Father. Go therefore to the Brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father ; and my God, and your God.

18. Mary Magdalen came, and told his disciples that she had seen the Lord, and declared to them what

*Luke*  
XXIV.

came to pass, that while they communed and reasoned, Jesus drew near, and went with them.

16. But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him :

17. And he said unto them, what manner of communications are these that ye have among yourselves, as ye walk sad.

18. And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things that are come to pass there in these days ?

19. But he said unto him, What things ? concerning Jesus of Nazareth, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the People :

20. How the chief priests and our Rulers delivered this man unto the judgment of death, and have crucified him. 21.

*Mark*  
XVI.

that had been with him, as they mourned & wept.

11. And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, they did not believe him also.

12. And after that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked and went into the country.

13. And they went and told it unto the residue. Neither believed they them.

14. But afterwards he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat ; and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart ; because they believed not them who had seen him after he was risen.

15. And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16. For he that believeth, and is baptized, shall be saved ; but he that believeth

*Matthew*  
XXVIII.

vernor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15. So they took the money, and did as they were taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16. Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, unto a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17. And when they saw him they worshiped. But some doubted.

18. And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth.

19. Go ye now and make disciples in all Nations. Baptizing them unto the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

20. Teaching them to observe all things what soever I have commanded you. And lo I am with you alway, even

*John*  
XX.

what he had said to her.

19. Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20. And when he had so said, he shewed *his* hands and his side to them. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21. Then said he to them again; Peace be unto you. As the Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22. When he had said this he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost.

23. Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them: whose soever ye shall retain, they are retained.

24. But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus,

*Luke*  
XXIV.

21. But we trusted that it was he who was to redeem Israel: and withall to day is the third day since these things were done.

22. Yea, and certain women also made us astonished, who were also early at the sepulchre:

23. And when they found not his body, they came saying, that they had seen a vision of Angels, who said that he was alive.

24. And certain of them who were with us went to the sepulchre, & found as the women said. But him we have not seen.

25. But he said unto them, O fools and slow of heart, as to all that the prophets have spoken!

26. That Christ ought to have suffered these things, and to have entered into his glory!

27. And he began from Moses, and all the prophets, to expound unto them in the scriptures the things

*Mark*  
XVI.

lieveth not, shall be condemned.

17. And these signs shall follow them that believe. In my name shall they cast out Demons. They shall speak with new tongues.

18. And they shall take up serpents in their hands; And if they drink any deadly thing it shall not hurt them: they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19. So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into Heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

20. And they went forth and preached every where; the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. *Amen.*

*Constitutions*

V. 14.

Christ was buried before sunset, in a new sepulchre. But when the first day of the week dawn'd, he arose from

*Matthew*  
XXVIII.  
even unto the  
end of the age.

*Acts*

I.

1. The former  
Treatise have I  
made, O Theo-  
philus, of all  
that Jesus began  
both to do and  
teach :

2. Until the  
day in which he  
was taken up, af-  
ter that he, thro'  
the Holy Ghost,  
had given Com-  
mandments unto  
the Apostles  
whom he had  
chosen to preach  
the Gospel.

3. To whom  
also he shewed  
himself alive af-  
ter his Passion,  
by many infalli-  
ble proofs ; be-  
ing seen of them  
forty days [See  
the same Chap. x.  
41] and speak-  
ing of the things  
pertaining to the  
Kingdom of God

4. And being  
assembled toge-  
ther with them  
he commanded  
them that they  
should not depart  
from Jerusalem,  
but wait for the  
promise of the Fa-  
ther, which, saith  
he, ye have heard  
by my mouth

5. For John  
truly

*John*  
XX.

Didymus, was  
not with them  
when Jesus came.

25. The other  
disciples therefore  
said unto him,  
that We have  
seen the Lord.  
But he said unto  
them, Except I  
shall see in his  
hands the print  
of the nails ; and  
thrust my hands  
into his side, and  
put my finger in-  
to the print of  
the nails, I will  
not believe.

26. And after  
eight days again  
his disciples were  
within, and Tho-  
mas with them.  
Then came Jesus,  
the doors being  
shut, and stood  
in the midst, and  
said, Peace be un-  
to you.

27. Then saith  
he to Thomas,  
Reach hither thy  
finger, and be-  
hold my hands,  
and reach hither  
thy hand, and  
thrust it into my  
side, and be not  
faithless, but be-  
lieving.

28. Thomas an-  
swered and said  
unto him, My  
Lord & my God.

29. Jesus saith  
unto him, Because  
thou hast seen me  
thou

*Luke*  
XXIV.

things concern-  
ing himself.

28. And they  
drew nigh unto  
the village whi-  
ther they went :  
and he made as  
though he would  
have gone fur-  
ther.

29. But they  
constrained him,  
saying, Abide  
with us ; for it  
is towards ever-  
ing, and the day  
far spent ; and he  
went in to tarry  
with them.

30. And it  
came to pass as  
he sat at meat he  
took bread, and  
blessed, and gave  
to them.

31. And when  
they had received  
the bread from  
him, their eyes  
were opened, and  
they knew him,  
and he vanished  
out of their sight.

32. But they  
said among them-  
selves, was not  
our Heart hidden  
within us, as he  
talk'd with us  
by the way, as he  
opened to us the  
scriptures ?

33. And they  
rose up the same  
hour sorrowful,  
and returned to  
Jerusalem ; and  
found the eleven  
A 4 gathered.

*Constitutions*  
V.

from the dead,  
and fulfilled those  
things which be-  
fore his passion  
he foretold to us,  
saying, The son  
of man must con-  
tinue in the heart  
of the earth three  
days and three  
nights. And  
when he was risen  
from the dead, he  
was made mani-  
fest first to Mary  
Magdalen, and  
Mary the mother  
of James ; then  
to Cleopas in the  
way ; and after  
that to us his dis-  
ciples, who had  
 fled away for fear  
of the Jews ; but  
privately were  
very inquisitive  
about him. But  
these things are  
also written in  
the Gospel.

VIII. 35.

I James, the  
Brother of Christ  
according to the  
flesh, but his Ser-  
vant as the only  
begotten God, &  
one appointed  
Bishop of Jerusa-  
lem by the Lord  
himself, and the  
Apostles, &c.

*Acts*

1.

truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost, which also you will receive not these many days hence, until Pentecost.

6. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him saying, Lord, Dost thou at this time restore again the Kingdom to Israel?

7. And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own Power.

8. But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be my witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9. And when he had spoken these things, a cloud received him, and he was taken out of their sight.

10. And while they looked stedfastly towards heaven, as he went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel.

11. And they said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing? This same Jesus who is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven

*John*

XX.

thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen and yet have believed.

*Paul*

1 Cor. XV.

3. I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, How that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures.

4. And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day, according to the Scriptures.

5. And that he was seen of Cephas, and after those things of the eleven.

6. Afterwards he was seen of above 500 brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain unto this present: but some are fallen asleep.

7. After that he was seen of James, then of all the Apostles:

8. And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

9. For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

*Luke*

XXVI.

gathered together, and them that were with them.

34. Who said, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared unto Simon.

35. And they told what things ~~were~~ done in the way, and that he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36. And as they thus spake, he himself stood in the midst of the disciples.

37. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38. But he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me and see, for a spirit hath not bones and flesh as ye see me have.

41. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said, Have ye here any meat?

42. And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish.

43. And he took ~~it~~, and did eat before them.

44. And he said unto them, These ~~were~~ my words which I spake unto you while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses, and the Prophets, and the Psalms concerning me.

45. Then

45. Then opened he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures.

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, that Christ should suffer, and rise the third day.

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, as far as all Nations ; beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are also witnesses of these things.

49 And behold I send the promise upon you ; but tarry ye in the City until ye be endued with Power from on high.

50 And he led them out to Bethany, and he lift up his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to pass while he blessed them, he was parted from them.

52 And they returned to Jerusalem with great joy.

53 And were continually in the temple praising God.

N. B. That the Messias or Christ was to die, and to be buried, and rise again from the dead, was frequently foretold both in the Old and New Testament. See Psalm XXII. and Isa. LIII. per tot. Dan. IX. 26. Psal. LXXXI. 8. XI. 6. XL. 2. with Constit. V. 14. 19. Jonah I. 17. with Matt. XII. 39, 40. XVI. 4. Luke XI. 29, 30. Matt. XVI. 21. XX. 17, 18, 19. Luk. IX. 22. Mar. VIII. 31. 1 Cor. XV. 3, 4. Ignat. Ad. Trall. §. 10.

The Observations which naturally arise from all these Accounts together are these,

I. That almost all the difficulties started in later ages about our Lord's Resurrection, are owing to the corruptions of our modern Copies : which ought therefore to be corrected before we pretend thoroughly to clear this matter, which I shall do under the following heads.

(1.) Our Copies of Matthew XXVII. 64. say, that the Jewish Chief Priests and Pharisees only supposed the disciples of Jesus might come *by night*, and steal away Christ's body : as if they were able to do it only at that time. Whereas the smallest guard of Soldiers, supported by authority, would then be more than sufficient to terrify and beat off eleven such fearful and dispirited men, as the Apostles then were, *by day* as well as *by night*. Accordingly that word is wanting in Beza's Copy, both Greek and Latin ; in the Alexandrian MS. and a great many more ; and freely given up by Dr. Mills, as an interpolation.

(2.) In Matt. XXVIII. 9. our ordinary copies have this clause, *And as the women went to tell his disciples*, behold Jesus met them, &c. This was indeed true of the whole number of these women, about two hours afterward, when they went from the sepulchre ; but not of the two Marias, with whom alone Matthew is now concerned ; and contradicts the rest of this history, not only in Matthew, but in Luke, and Mark, and the Constitutions also. Accordingly this clause is wanting in Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, and in many others, and so may well be rejected as spurious.

(3.) In John XX. 8. All our other copies, even Beza's Latin, have this clause, that *The other disciple* (John himself) *went into the sepulchre, and saw the grave-clothes and believed ;* whereas the Greek says,

he

he did *not* believe the resurrection. These other copies do not only contradict all the other evidence, which fully assures us, that none of the Apostles did yet believe the resurrection, Matt. XXVIII. 17. John XX. 24, 25. Mark XVI. 11, 13, 14. but the verse immediately following it in all copies : *For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise from the dead.*

(4.) In Luke XXIII. 53. Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, and no others, has this remarkable clause, *And when Joseph of Arimathea had laid Jesus in the sepulchre, he put to the sepulchre a stone which twenty men could hardly roll.* Such cylindrical stones, which were at last to be raised over sepulchres, and of such vast largeness, intirely agree with the Old Testament, Gen. XXXV. 20. 2 Sam. XVIII. 18. and Mr. Maundrell's descriptions and measures of several of them, in the neighbourhood of Judea, pag. 21, 22, 23. I suppose this account has been omitted of late in our copies, from the ignorance of the transcribers ; who thought this largeness plainly incredible.

(5.) Luke XXIII. 55. Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, mentions only the *two* forenamed Women, of those many that followed our Saviour from Galilee, and saw him upon the Cross, (and this confirmed by Mark XV. 47. and the Constitutions V. 14.) who saw the sepulchre in Joseph of Arimathea's garden : While the other copies omit the number *two*. Now the confusion of the journey of those *two* so early, with the others journey so much later, has been the chief occasion of the perplexity in this whole history.

(6.) Luke XXIV. 12. We have this verse inserted into all our modern copies : *But Peter arose and ran to the sepulchre ; and sloping down he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed ; wondering in himself at that which had come to pass.* Which text, at this point of time, confounds the whole narration also. Peter being evidently unacquainted with these matters, till he ran to the sepulchre with John afterward. John XX. 1—10. Nay Luke's own account, XXIV. 24. plainly contradicts this relation, which our modern copies make him to give us here, of Peter's running *alone* at this time to the sepulchre. For there the two disciples going to *Oulammaus* (a Village so called in the Septuagint, as the old name of Bethel, Gen. XXVIII. 19. but not to *Emmaus*, as in our modern copies) say they were not *one* in the singular, but *certain persons* in the plural, who confirmed the testimony of the two Women, concerning our Saviour's body being removed or gone out of the sepulchre : as Joh. XX. 2. But this verse is wanting both in the Greek and Latin of Beza's copy.

(7.) Mark XVI. 1. We have in our other Copies this verse ; *And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalen, Mary the mother of James, (both rightly named in the verse foregoing, xv. 47. as beholding the place where the body of Jesus was laid.) And Salome had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint it.* This addition of *Salome* also confounds the history of the two former *Maries*, which was much earlier, with that of the rest of the Women, which was much later : whereas Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, justly omits the first part of verse 1st, and rightly connects the other narration with the last verse of the foregoing chapter, thus : *And Mary Magdalen, and Mary the*

*the mother of James beheld the Place where he was laid; And they went and bought sweet spices, that they might anoint him.*

(8.) In Mark xvi. 2. Our usual Copies most absurdly assure us that *very early* in the morning, was the same point of time with that *when the Sun was risen*. But then Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, omits the word *very early*, perhaps as inconsistent with the other. However, I strongly suspect the omission here of a few words in all our copies, between *very early*, and *sunrising*, not only because of the inconsistency of those two characters of time, but because, somewhat later in John, the more ambiguous expression *very early*, is explained by this other *while it was yet dark*: which we all know is utterly inconsistent with *sunrising*.

(9.) Luke xxiv. 40. Our common copies give thus this verse, that *When Jesus had thus spoken, He shewed the two Women his hands and his feet*; as if these two Women now actually took the same satisfaction as to the resurrection that the Apostles did afterwards; which no way agrees with the prodigious concern they were now in, when, in Mark's words, xvi. 8. *They went out, and fled from the sepulchre; for they feared, and were amazed; neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.* But Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, has no such verse.

(10.) Acts x. 41. Our usual copies omit a most material passage, which is in Beza's copy, both Greek and Latin, and confirm'd by Ignatius's double citation of it. Ad. Trall. §. 9. and Ad. Smyrn. §. 3. as well as by several other ancient copies. It is in Peter's speech to Cornelius, that *Jesus of Nazareth did eat and drink and converse with the Apostles 40 days after he rose from the dead*. Nor ought I to forget here that extraordinary confirmation of those 40 Days, which the original institution of Lent, before Passion Week, in memory of them, affords us. For thus speak the Apostles themselves, Constitut. V. 13. *The fast of or for forty days, is to be observed by you; as containing a memorial of our Lord's Conversation and Legislature.*

II. I observe, That the descriptions of the first single Angel that rolled away the stone, and affrighted away the keepers of the sepulchre, and appeared to the two Maries, and of the two or four teen afterwards, are so very different, that Expositors are to blame not to take notice of them. The former is thus described, that *An Angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.* Matt. xxviii. 2, 3, 4. And when a little afterward this Angel removed the stone, and sat on the right side of the sepulchre, *He was clothed in a long white Garment, and the Women were affrighted. And they went out and fled from the sepulchre; they feared and were amazed; neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.* Mar. xvi. 5—8. Of two of the latter it is only said, *Mary Magdalen seeth two Angels, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.* And when they spake to her, she appeared no way affrighted: which is almost the same case with that of the two Angels, that appeared to the rest of the Women two hours afterward. I observe,

III. That



III. That we have other evidence, that in some of these appearances to the Women there were *several Angels* seen, and perhaps five in all. This we are fully informed of by Cleopas, and his companion. Luke xxiv. 23. that the Women had seen a *vision of Angels*. As it is equally plain, that two such Angels stood by the xi. at our Saviour's Ascension. Act. i. 11. I Observe,

IV. That the vast largeness of the sepulchre stone, that could hardly be rolled by 20 Men, demonstrates the absurdity of that plea of the Jews, that the xi. *disciples came by night and stole the body away*, while the soldiers were asleep. Since this could not possibly be done, even had they been all fast asleep, without making such a noise as must infallibly have awakened them, and disappointed the design of carrying off the body unseen and unheard; as was to be pretended. I observe

V. That the principal objection against this history of the resurrection of Christ on the third day, is what all our copies afford us, Matt. xii. 40. that, *As Jonas was three days and three nights in the Whale's belly, so shall the Son of Man also be three days and three nights in the Heart of the earth*. This reading is the same both in Beza's Greek and Latin, and in the modern copies of the Apostolical Constitutions themselves, v. 14. and thence in Ignatius's Epistle to the Trallians, §. 9. Whereas Jesus of Nazareth was dead but one whole day, part of two other days, and two nights. Which cannot with any propriety be esteemed *three days and three nights*: as the prediction, if genuine, affirms. Now here I must offer a solution quite different from our modern Commentators. For as I agree with them that the resurrection after a day, and part of two more, may be called *three days*; or *within*, or *after three days*; or *on the third day*, which are the usual language in such cases in the New Testament, in Josephus, and other ancient Authors, so I cannot pretend that *two nights* alone are *three nights*. Now this being granted, I deny that ever our Lord did foretel so great a duration between his death and resurrection as *three days and three nights*: which yet is in almost all copies, even in Josephus also, for the duration of Jonas's abode in the belly of the Whale: to which history our Saviour more than once alludes upon this occasion. But here I desire the Reader to take notice, (1.) That none but Matthew has this comparison, as expressly affixed to the time of Jonas's continuance in the Whale's belly; and that only in this text, xii. 40. He himself says afterward. xvi. 4. That the Jews should have no further sign, but that of the prophet Jonas: i. e. He should descend into Hades; continue there for some time; and after that ascend out of it; without any particular indication of the duration of his stay in Hades. And in Luke, *As Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of Man be to this Generation*. So Beza's, and all our copies both Greek and Latin, have it; and no more. However, Take notice, (2.) That Beza's copy, both the Greek and Latin, give us in Luke xi. 30. this text, parallel to that in Matthew. *And as Jonas was in the belly of the Whale three days and three nights, so shall the Son of Man be in the Earth*, without any other addition. Take notice, (3.) That when Ignatius, in the beginning of the second Century, cites this text from the Constitutions, as he frequently does many others, Cotelerius informs

us that this last part of the verse was wanting in two Editions, and three MSS. of the old version, and by him inserted from a single Edition. I take notice (4) That when Irenæus, or his Old Translator, towards the end of the 2d Century, cites this very verse of Matthew's, ver. 31. he entirely omits that part of the verse also. Take notice (5) that whenever elsewhere the interval between Christ's death and resurrection is spoken of, it is never supposed to extend above three days, either in the Jews Accusations, or the Christian Memorials; which texts are very numerous. See Joh. ii. 19, 20. Matth. xvi. 21. xvii. 23. xx. 19. xxvi. 61. xxvii. 40. 63. Luk. ix. 22. xviii. 33. xxiv. 7. 21. 46. Mark ix. 31. x. 34. Ignat. Ad. Trall. §. 9. and Irenæus ubi supra. So that even this reading is very probably owing to nothing but to a later interpolation also. Nay, in Justin Martyr's Copy, Jonas himself was but three days in the Whale's Belly. Dialogue with Trypho, pag. 334. I observe

VI. That the Order and Times of the several Events, belonging to our Saviour's Resurrection, seem to be these :

(1.) Before four o'Clock in the morning, or at the very beginning of day-light, a terrible Angel descended from heaven; rolled away the great stone from the sepulchre; and sat upon it. At the sight of whom the keepers were horribly affrighted, and fled away in the utmost confusion, and Christ rose from the dead; leaving his grave-clothes in the sepulchre, Matth. xxviii. 1—4. John xx. 5, 6. Constit. v. 19. Ignat. Ad. Trall. §. 9.

(2.) Very soon after this, the two Maries came to see the sepulchre. These found the great stone rolled away; the keepers gone, and the terrible Angel now removed to the right side of the sepulchre. Who informed them of the resurrection of Christ. They are bidden by this Angel to tell the disciples, and Peter in particular, that Christ was risen, and would meet them in Galilee. Yet did they not now carry any message to any body: so greatly were they affrighted at what they had seen and heard, as we have already noted from Mar. xvi. 1—8.

(3.) Very soon after this, Mary Magdalen, having a little recovered her surprise, returns by herself to the sepulchre, and sees now calmly that the great stone was really rolled away, and the body of Christ really removed, or gone; and runs directly to Peter and John, as being together at the trial and condemnation, when all the other Apostles were dispersed, John xviii. 15, 16. and informs them, that the body of Christ was certainly removed or gone out of the sepulchre, Joh. xx. 1, 2.

(4.) Immediately upon this message, Peter and John run to the sepulchre, and both go into it; and see the body gone, and the grave clothes remaining. Yet could they not yet persuade themselves of the reality of the resurrection. John xx. 3—10.

(5.) Very soon after this, Mary Magdalen, who could not keep pace with Peter and John running with all their might, returns to the sepulchre; sees two mild Angels in the sepulchre, *the one at the head, the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain*, and is not much affrighted: but enquires for the body, both of them and of an unknown stander by: as supposing yet no more than a removal of it to some other place by that Person, whom she took for the Gardener: (having not yet been in the grave herself, nor seen the grave-clothes remaining

remaining there, as Peter and John had.) That unknown person proved to be Christ himself : who accordingly discovered himself to her the first of all others ; and bade her not now stay for any instances of worship to him, but go and immediately inform his disciples of his resurrection, and of his ascension directly to their common *Father and God* : which she does accordingly. John xx. 11—18.

(6.) About two hours after this, or after sun-rising, came the rest of the women who had seen the crucifixion ; and finding how the facts were, and that Christ was certainly risen ; which Mary Magdalen, (who now seems to have joined their company) could inform them of also ; they are allowed to *take hold of his feet, and worship him*. They are also bidden by two Angels, to go and inform the disciples of what they had seen and known. Matth. xxviii. 7. especially of his meeting them in Galilee, ver. 10. which message the first Angel had before chared the two Maries withal.

(7.) About this time, Christ appeared to his brother James, the circumstances of which, are not preserved in our Gospels. But they are preserved in a Gospel older than any of them, I mean *the Gospel according to the Hebrews*, in the words following, produced out of it by Jerom : *When the Lord had given the linen cloth [wherein he had been buried] to the Priest servant, He went to James, and appeared to him. For James had sworn, that he would not eat bread from that hour he had drunk the cup of the Lord, [or, the Lord had drunk the cup] until he saw him risen from the dead. The Lord said, Bring hither a table, and bread. He took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to James the Just ; and said to him, My Brother, eat thy bread, for the Son of Man is risen from the dead*

(8.) Some time that day, Christ was seen of Cephas, or Peter, as the Apostles tell the two disciples, after they were returned from Oulammaus : Luke xxiv. 34. and Paul confirms, 1 Cor. xv. 5. But the particular time of the day, as well as the other circumstances of this Appearance to Peter are not preserved to us in our New Testament. However, of this Appearance I understand Ignatius Ad. Smyrn. §. 3. where he assures us, that *When Jesus came to Peter, and to those that were with him, he said unto them, Take, handle me, and see, that I am not an incorporeal Demon*.

(9.) Towards evening, Christ appeared in a most surprizing and unexpected manner, to Cleopas and another disciple, in the Way to Oulammaus, Luke xxiv. Which thing itself is plainly intimated by Mark xvi. 12. and whose time and circumstances are distinctly related by Luke xxiv. 13—35.

(10.) Late in the evening of the same day Christ appeared, and that in a like surprizing and unexpected manner, to ten of the Apostles then met together, Thomas not being with them : He then *upbraided them with their unbelief*, and offered them the most sensible satisfaction as to the reality of his resurrection, and presence in the same body in which he had been crucified : while yet for joy and wonder they hardly believe it. Of this Appearance we have three distinct accounts. John xx. 19—23. Luke xxiv. 36—53. Mark xvi. 14—20. without any sign of a contradiction.

(11.) On the next Lord's day he appeared to all the XI. John xx. 26, 29. Constit. v. 19. Ignat. Ad. Smyrn. §. 3. who were then met together,

together, Thomas being now with them ; and conquered his prodigious degree of incredulity in a way perfectly undeniable.

(12.) Next to these probably must that have been which John styles His *third* appearance to any number of his disciples, Chap. xxi. 14. Of which we have a full account in that Chapter : and this account attested by the Presbyters of Ephesus, as written by the Apostle himself, a little before his death, about A. D. 99.

(13.) Some time after these appearances, Christ went to a *mountain in Galilee*, where he had appointed to meet a great number of his disciples, and where above 500 were present: Matth. xxviii. 16. 17. 1 Cor. xv. 6. Here the incredulity of some of them appears not to have been entirely conquered. For when the rest *worshipped him*, we are informed that still *some doubted*. And this is the very last instance that I have ever met with, of any such *doubt* about Christ's resurrection among Christians, I had almost said among either Jews or Heathens themselves, in all primitive antiquity.

(14.) About this time might be his second appearance to his brother James, when the Apostles, in agreement with all antiquity, inform us, that Himself, as well as the Apostles, ordained him Bishop of Jerusalem. Constitut. VIII. 35.

(15.) Next to this may that appearance be which Paul mentions, 1 Cor. xv. 7, after that to James ; when he adds, *then to all the Apostles*, which I suppose belongs to the end of the 40 days, since his resurrection, when in the presence of them all he publicly ascended up into heaven, Acts I. 1—11.

(16.) The *last* appearance, or rather appearances of all, for how many there were we do not know, were made to Paul himself, 1 Cor. xv. 8. as to one *born out at due time* : who had been before a bitter Persecutor of Christ's Religion.

N. B. There were solemn memorials of our Saviour's Resurrection, appointed by the Apostles, Constit. V. 19. viz. The Lord's day every week, especially that Lord's day on which he rose, or Easter day : together with the next Lord's day, when he convinced Thomas : as also the Ascension after 40 days, and Pentecost after ten more days : when, according to Christ's promise, after his resurrection, the miraculous gifts of the Holy Ghost were poured on the Apostles. All which days have accordingly been annually observed from the age of the Apostles till this very age.

N. B. As to the numerous mistakes in our modern copies, both of the Old and New Testament, we have a very large catalogue of them from that eminent, sagacious, and very good Man, Dr. Wall, in his *Critical Notes upon the Old and New Testament* : though even he could never be made sensible of what I have plainly proved elsewhere, that many of those mistakes were voluntary, and made either by the wicked Jews, when they set up their spurious Messiah Barchocab, [See *Essay on the Old Testament, passim*] Or by the old wicked Hereticks, the followers of Simon Magus, who made it their business to forge spurious books, or interpolate the genuine true ones : as will soon be proved in my large Work now in the Press.

N. B. Since not the *Prophecies* only, but the *Miracles* of the Bible have of late been denied, or expose to contempt by such as are very little acquainted with the times whereto they belong, and very incom-

petent

petent judges of such truly ancient records as contain them ; I shall take leave to instance in two Writers, with whom I have myself been concerned, and to observe how little foundation they had for their several attempts against Christianity. As to the Prophecies of the Old Testament, so often appealed to by Christ and his Apostles, for its support, Mr. Anthony Collins 20 Years ago pretended that these Prophecies had been already fulfilled under the Old Testament in their proper and literal sense : and that Christ and his Apostles only depended on such weak allegorical or secondary Senses, as the last 1200 Years had made use of. While, upon the most accurate Enquiry, it soon appeared, that such an allegorical or double sense had never been put upon any Prophecy, by any body, till the fourth century of the Gospel. And as to the miracles, which all antiquity took to be also undeniable, they have some time ago been allegoriz'd also by a weak Writer, and the very first of them has been lately ridicul'd, as if it were utterly unbecoming one that pretended to be the Jews Messiah, to be concerned in it : I mean the *turning water into wine* at a wedding feast in Cana of Galilee, John II. 1—11. Now I confess that upon perusal of that account, it seems plain to me, from the History as it stands in all our copies, that Our Saviour did not himself think this a proper occasion for exerting his power of miracles : that when his Mother first propos'd it, He was very angry with her, and severely chid her for it : *Woman, what have I to do with thee ; mine hour is not yet come*, ver. 3, 4. and that when she still insisted on it, ver. 5. he rather submitted to his mother, as a dutiful son, than originally acted according to his own Inclination, as the true Messiah. I suppose both his Mother and his first disciples presumed he had the power of working miracles ; but that he delay'd to use that power too long, ver. 11. whose desire he here comply'd with.

N. B. As to the fulfilling of Scripture Prophecies, in the literal Sense, I have so thoroughly demonstrated it in my former and present Writings, by a vast number of Examples, as renders, I think, that Argument for the Proof of the divine Authority of the sacred Books perfectly undeniable. See *Literal Accomplishment of Prophecies, per tot.* For which I venture in particular to appeal to the new Edition of my *Essay of the Revelation*, and especially to the xv. eminent events specified at the end of it, which had been every one foretold from those Prophecies, and hath every one already come to pass accordingly.

In truth it appears to me, that most of our divines at present so generally spend their time and studies either in such Heathen, or in such later Christian Authors, and later Copies of the sacred Books, as contribute but little to the discovery of the original State of Christianity ; and is a main occasion of their being puzzled at every turn, even by Scepticks more ignorant than themselves. While a through acquaintance with the Copies and Books of the two first Centuries, would easily prevent almost all such perplexities whatsoever.

And thus by my Observation it has ever been, and will ever be with the most formidable Objections against the primitive Christian Religion, that they still occasion such deeper Enquiries as at length will *silence*, I wish I could add also, and *convert* those Scepticks which propose them, to the same primitive christianity. *Amen. Amen.*

William Whiston, July 23, 1744.

